



*The Life & Ministry of Our Lord Jesus Christ*

5 B.C.- A.D. 29

*In chronological order*

**AUTHOR'S PREFACE**

The coming of Jesus, the Christ was not a change in God's old Testament (Covenant) programs. It is unfortunate that Christians have been taught that, in effect, the God of the Old Testament is not the God of the New Testament; that the covenant people of the Old Testament are a different people from Christians, the church and/or the covenant people of the New Testament.

In effect, modern day theology has created two Gods, two religions, two sets of covenant people and two different standards of redemption and salvation in the Bible. This is not true. There is one God. MK 12:32; 1Cor 8:6; Eph 4:6; 1Tim 2:15. He is eternal and self-existent. He was before the foundation of the world. He created Adam, His covenant man. Adam took on flesh to live among other men and God's creation to exercise dominion that God gave him and commanded him to perform.

When Adam sinned, God came to earth and took on the same flesh known as Jesus the Christ, in order to redeem His Adam/covenant man, who possessed the spirit of God, made in His image. (Heb 2:14)

There is one covenant race/people starting with Adam, preserved in Noah, Shem, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob/Israel. God's covenants and promises are to those people and their descendants in the flesh, only. All creation is God's. He can and will restore it all in His own time according to His own plan. Rom 8:19-23 But that does not make all people or angels members of the Adam/covenant race of people. Nor can others become a part of the covenant people through prayer, righteous living or any other human effort. God is God and chooses whom He will. Our liking it or not liking His choices does not change the matter. (Rom 9:13-23)

I have heard people say, "I cannot love and serve a God who does not offer salvation and redemption to all." First, this confirms what I have said for years, most people want a God they can control. Secondly, This statement shows the ignorance of those who speak it. Not all people came from Adam. Not all people were under the law of God, only Adam. Not all people sinned in the garden and not all people need redemption. Only Adam sinned. Even Eve's sin did not

bring a curse. Only Adam's sin condemned his descendants to inherit his loss of Holy Spirit and his sin genes. God the Spirit promised eternal life and earthy dominion only to Adam and his descendants, whom He indwells. Therefore, only Adam and his descendants need redemption, salvation and eternal life.

Now, many will really rebel against the idea that all races did not come from Adam. However, no credible scientist believes that all races of varying genes and DNA originated from Adam. Christians fight evolution on the one hand and preach and support the most preposterous form of evolution on the other. Even those who believe in evolution do not believe that there was crossing of species. Not even other races believe this.

Then you have those who incredibly twist Scripture to say something not said in order to find a place where God changed white Adamites into other races at the flood or at Babel or who knows where. The truth is that all modern teaching that all races came from Adam is the oldest lie from before the garden. It has been the heart of Baal worship, Masonic orders, Babylonianism and all isms that hate God and His covenant people.

Therefore, many Christians believe that the Old Covenant was for the Jew (a word and people most do not know or understand) and the New Covenant was for the Christian and the Church. They believe that the Church and Christians are not Jewish, which is correct. But then, neither are the Old Covenant People Jewish. The Old Covenant and the New Covenant people are Hebrew, Adam/Israel. Today's Jews are not and do not claim to be Hebrew. Christians must learn to know what God's Word says.

Let me interject here a comment. I am a King James Bible user and still think it is the best translation. However, I am not at all impressed with those who are King James idolaters. The King James Bible was translated in 1611. Many, who do not know any better and who will not listen to reason, believe that Paul used the King James Version. I have heard it said. The current King James, titled, the Authorized Version, has been revised many times. There are thousands of word changes in the newest Authorized Version versus the 1611. All who would find the truth of God study the original languages. We have all been criticized and called names by these King James idolaters for giving the original words and meanings. Of course, this is a hypocritical stand since the men who wrote the Authorized King James Version had to study, evaluate and translate the original languages in the first place. So these poor ignorant souls think it was alright in 1611 to interpret the Scriptures from Greek and Hebrew to English, but it is some how evil to do so today.

Of course, their reasoning is absurd. A good preacher and Bible teacher will make ample use of the original texts and make application to modern day sin and living. I dare say that one of the reasons the church is devoid of power today is that the preachers and teachers of the Scripture rarely make application of pertinent Scriptures to the lives of the listener. I know hundreds of Christians today who have been in church all their lives and still have no power to resist temptation and sin. They cannot solve one financial or relational problem from Scripture. They have no clue as to the covenants of God individually and /or nationally. They have no clue as to the race issue, government, poverty, welfare, education and a hundred other subjects. These Christians simply follow the crowd and then wonder what's wrong with our society. Hosea said it best; **"My people perish for lack of knowledge."** (Hose 4:6) The reason they perish is because the priests (preachers) have no knowledge either.

The reason this is so critical is because there are dozens of words, such as, Jew, Gentile, church, redemption, salvation, hell, heaven, which are so misunderstood from the current King James as well as all other versions. Today's colloquial meanings do not match 17<sup>th</sup> Century

English. The new translations do more harm than good. What we need for this hour are men of God who know God and who know what God is saying in Scripture. These men are led of the Holy Spirit to “.....bring forth out of his treasure things new and old.” **Mat 13:52** It is no accident that this is happening. Most of the Denominational schools and religious publishing Houses are either owned and/or operated by Jewish people.

An example of this is as follows: The 1611 version of the Bible used the word ðJudeanö in most places translated Jew today. The word ðJudeanö referred to all races that lived in the land of Judea, a portion of Palestine. Individuals of the Tribe of Judah or the House of Judah were Hebrews, some times called Jews, and lived in Judea; but so did the Canaanite/Edomites, Babylonians and Assyrians. They all became known as Judeans. Non Hebrew peoples gradually accepted the term Jews as referring to them and saw the advantage of being a chosen covenant people. Just like today, Native Indians, Blacks, Orientals and other people claim to be ðAmericansö if they are born in America or immigrate to America. In the beginning this was not so. Only those Anglo-Saxon European white immigrants became known as Americans.

Today, the dumb Christian reinforces this false teaching and the Canaanite/Edomites insist on it being so. In fact, today if you deny it, you are labeled a hater and anti-Semitic by modern day Jews and Christians. The truth is, most modern day Jews, are not Judeans, Hebrews or pure Adamites. If you are not Adamite/Hebrew, you are not of the covenant lineage. In fact, the Canaanite/Edomites were actually of the cursed seed of Cain. That is why Jesus referred to them as being of their father the devil (John 8) and John the Baptist called them serpents refusing to baptize them. (Mat 23:33 & Lu 3:7)

These are many of the reasons for this study. This study in the Life of our Lord will identify why He came and how every thing He did while here was for a specific purpose. One common mistake Christians make is trying to make the Life of Christ on earth a pattern for every action they should take in similar circumstances. This is wrong. The verses that speak of Christ as our example refer to His willingness to suffer only. Christ came to die in a specific way on a specific date in a specific place. His actions many times were to preserve His life for this purpose, not to be an example of non-resistance against evil or the use of force to protect our families and property.

***1PE 2:21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps:***

The modern slogan, ðWhat would Jesus doö is inappropriate and not Scriptural, in some areas outside of suffering. Yet Christians who use the slogan most use it least in suffering.

This study will challenge you to study and prove your beliefs.

## **INTRODUCTION**

### **1. PREFEACE TO SYNOPTIC GOSPELS**

#### **Matt 1:1**

***The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.***

The word ðgenerationö is very important. It links to the word ðkindö in Genesis (1:12) and again to the word Generation in Gen 5:1.

Today's attitude of toleration and acceptance of all races as equal in all things is sinful and wicked. This attitude originated before Adam and was present in the garden. Cain picked it up and took it to the orient where he married into the oriental clans. He and or his descendants

founded the religion of Baal and masonry. (Gen 10:10) This attitude is the root of world government, (Gen 11:4) and the policies of government designed to destroy God's covenant people and nation through miscegenation.

As we will see a little later, God is specific in His Scriptures as to who Christ was divinely and humanly. He was God in the divine and he was Adam/Israel/Judah in the flesh. The Scripture is also clear as to whom he came to redeem and save. He came, as the law required, a kinsman redeemer to save and redeem his kinsman, Israel/Adam.

He will, by redeeming his covenant people, in turn bring restitution of the earth and all races of people. But the God/Christ did not die to open the covenant to a new people who were not already a part of His covenant. He came to redeem those who had been divorced from the covenant and save those who were still a part of the covenant.

Only covenant people can be priests and kings and thus qualified to rule with Christ and take dominion of the earth.

### **Mark 1:1**

#### ***!The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God;***

The word ðGospelö is one word that needs to be studied. The word became known in Greek to mean öthe good tidingsö. We know that the ögood news or good tidingsö of the Bible is öthe coming of the kingdom which includes the coming of the Christ, the messiah redeemer of Israel.

Again, this news was good only to those to whom the kingdom had been promised and to those who had been cut off by their sin. There was no anticipation or expectation for a redeemer or kingdom to anyone outside the descendants of Adam/Israel. In fact, to this day, the leaders of all other religions gladly admit that Jesus Christ is God of the White Adamite, not the other races. Those who had never been under the law, who had not fallen in sin and been divorced from the covenants of Abraham and needing a redeemer were not aware of or felt any need for a redeemer or kingdom of God.

Israel, on the other hand, had been taught generation by generation that there was a God and that Yahweh God was their God. They were aware of their responsibility to God and all other races under the law. They were aware that their fore fathers had violated that law and rejected the covenant. Thus, this generation and many before them were divorced and cut off from any hope of this covenant. (Eph 2:11-15) without a redeemer/Saviour.

Tell me, are there any other people who have experienced this history and knowledge? No! Therefore, it was to these people, the Adam/Israel people to whom the promises were made. The old covenant was specifically for the Old Covenant people of Adam/Israel. After Israel was divorced and cut off from the Old covenant, God specifically promised a new covenant for these same people and their descendants. (Jer 31 & Heb 8) It is the Israel people who were being punished for their sin. It was their descendants that were to be multiplied into a multitude of nations (Gen 48:19) and be regathered in a new land in the North and West. (Isa 49:12) (2 Sam 7:10)

They had been expelled from the covenant for over 700 years. They were the beggars at the gates begging for a crumb from the table of Judah. (Luke 16:20) They were the ones who were pining away saying where is the promise of His coming. They were the ones who rejoiced when they heard the news that the Christ had come. (Acts 15:31, Acts 16:34). It was not the Africans, nor the Orientals, nor the Indians or any of those who were never a part of God's covenant people who rejoiced and called this good news. And it is my opinion that missionary efforts among these people today is a waste of time because the emphasis is on preaching repentance

and entrance into the kingdom. While we are to bring the whole creation under the Law of God, there is nothing commanding us to make covenant people out of non-covenant people. You can't make sheep out of goats.

God said in Amos 9 to Israel, "I know thee only of all the families of the earth have I known. Therefore, I will punish you, for your sins." What good news it is to those who are born of the seed of Abraham, when they hear the call of the Spirit and the Word.

Our problem today is that we have filled the church with multitudes of people who have been led to believe they can become covenant people by saying I believe, praying a prayer and being baptized. This has resulted in a belief that all people can be spirit filled, spirit led, rule in God's kingdom and bring justice and righteousness to the earth. What a travesty and what a deception on society.

But it is worth noting that international leaders of the Canaanites and their world organizations have taken our sons to war to bring down all white Christian Adam/Israel national leaders in Russia, Rhodesia, South Africa, Nigeria, China, and Many European nations. They then replace these Christian leaders with non-covenant people who can be easily bribed, controlled by fear, greed and power. These international leaders then go in and literally steal the natural resources of the lands from the people for profits in the world of trade. The dictators put in power are enriched by payoffs, drug money and our own national aide programs, but the people continue to starve suffer and bleed our nation with poverty and tears until we pour out our wealth on them. Don't get me wrong, I am in favor of helping the poor. But God said to help the household of faith first. (Gal 6:10)

In summary, the "Gospel" is the good news of the coming of Jesus Christ to redeem his people and establish His kingdom. This is not the Gospel to non-covenant people.

#### **Luke 1:1-4**

*1 Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,*

*2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word;*

*3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,*

*4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed*

Luke was a physician. He accompanied Paul on all His journeys and wrote Paul's letters and the Book of Acts as Paul dictated them. He wrote this Gospel from inspiration by the Holy Spirit.

Luke, as Paul, ministered primarily to the Hebrew covenant people dispersed among the Greeks, Europe and Asia Minor. This territory was the old Assyrian and Babylonian Empires where the Israelites were carried to when brought out of Palestine in 720 B.C. many of these dispersed of Israel worshiped in the synagogues along with those dispersed from the House of Judah which included Benjamin and the Levites. James refers to these people as well as Paul. For this reason, the Greek language as well as many other languages were used by these dispersed covenant people. (Wrongly called Gentiles)

Because of this language difference from those in Palestine called Judeans, we get real good explanations of prophetic verses. Unfortunately, dispensationalists and futurists do not use them because they destroy their own arguments.

Luke gives his purpose for writing this record, "...so thou mightest know the certainty of those things..."

As the Apostle John who basically stated the same reason. Written form seems to carry strong assurance of accuracy since it can be checked and rechecked by readers and researchers.

## 2. PREFACE TO JOHN'S GOSPEL

### **John 1:1-5**

*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*

*2 The same was in the beginning with God.*

*3 All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.*

*4 In him was life; and the life was the light of men.*

*5 And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.*

The story of Jesus Christ starts before the foundation of the world. Jesus Christ is the Word. The Word was in the beginning and the Word or Jesus Christ was and is God. He created all things. He sustains all things. This world is not lost to Satan. This world does not belong to Satan. Satan has not temporarily taken over the world. Christians have vacated the world due to false teachers. They are all waiting around for a rapture that will never come, at least, not as an escape door from persecution.

In God, Jesus Christ the Word, is life. This life is the light of men (Adamites) The light can and does shine in the darkness of the world. But that dark world does not comprehend or understand it. We are thorns and salt to them. Darkness is not just unbelieving people. Darkness is everywhere there is no light. Spirit and Word is light. We, the covenant people have a spirit wherein the spirit of God and Word can reside. God is the light of the world. He in us makes us lights in the world. Darkness prevails where the light children are not allowed to live and rule under God.

Nothing will get you in trouble with the law any quicker than to shine the light of the Word on the darkness of the rulers. They will not understand it when you say you don't want your children in government schools or vaccinated, or you won't let your children drink, smoke, and listen to rock music or any of the other unrighteous acts. You will be called an abuser, a parent who is hindering the socialization of your children. You cannot spank your child, or use a switch on them. That is considered cruel and abusive.

Jesus Christ evoked that kind of hate from the people who were the darkness. Who hated Him? Not the common people. It was Herod, the Sadducees, Pharisees and other leaders who knew not God. Those same people are alive today. They are the descendants of the same God haters in Jesus' day. They don't just not believe. They are genetically predisposed to hate God, the Israel Covenant people of God and they are bent on the destruction of these people, their churches and the God they worship. They are embedded in the ACLU, the Communist Party, the ADL, Muslims, Oriental religions new age religion and many other anti-God organizations.

## **3. TWO GENEALOGIES OF JESUS CHRIST.**

### Genealogies.

Why genealogies? As a young Christian, I was told that genealogies were not important; the Gospel was for everyone regardless of genetics. They usually quoted Paul:

*1TI 1:4 Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions,*

*rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do.*

***TIT 3:9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.***

But as always, verses are used in general and out of context. Notice the importance God puts on genealogy:

***1CH 5:17 All these were reckoned by genealogies in the days of Jotham king of Judah, and in***

***the days of Jeroboam king of Israel.***

***7:5 And their brethren among all the families of Issachar were valiant men of might, reckoned in all by their genealogies fourscore and seven thousand.***

***And the sons of Bela; Ezbon, and Uzzi, and Uzziel, and Jerimoth, and Iri, five; heads of the house of their fathers, mighty men of valour; and were reckoned by their genealogies twenty and two thousand and thirty and four. ~People of Jerusalem***

***9:1 So all Israel were reckoned by genealogies; and, behold, they were written in the book of the kings of Israel and Judah, who were carried away to Babylon for their transgression.***

***2CH 12:15 Now the acts of Rehoboam, first and last, are they not written in the book of Shemaiah the prophet, and of Iddo the seer concerning genealogies? And there were wars between Rehoboam and Jeroboam continually.***

***31:19 Also of the sons of Aaron the priests, which were in the fields of the suburbs of their cities, in every several city, the men that were expressed by name, to give portions to all the males among the priests, and to all that were reckoned by genealogies among the Levites.***

Everything that was done in relation to government, the worship, priesthood, judges, etc. was done based upon the genealogy of the individuals. David found out very quickly that if the wrong people were in leadership in the tabernacle and moving the ark, there was a penalty to pay. The assignments of leadership in the kingdom and the membership of the bride will be by genealogy. To be true, if you have the right genealogy and no faith or repentance, you still will not be appointed. But it doesn't matter how much religion you have or do, if you are not genealogically a descendant of Adam/Abraham/Isaac/Jacob Israel through physical birth or adoption as Joseph's children, you will not have authority or position in the kingdom.

The law required that a redeemer be a kinsman. (Lev 25:48) Adam/Israel was sold into slavery. (Isa 50:1) God sold them into slavery when He put them away from the covenant. The only way that they could be redeemed was for a kinsman to come and pay the ransom. God was the only one who could pay that price but He had to do it in the flesh of an Adam/Israelite. This He did when he took on the flesh of Mary.

The two genealogies are given to prove the flesh kinsman ship of Jesus Christ to Jacob/Israel and David. This is done in the genealogy provided by Mathew. Luke on the other hand provides a genealogy of Mary to show the same kinsman ship all the way back to Adam. You may ask, "What good is this genealogy if Joseph was not the father. What does it prove?"

Devout Hebrews of all ages would not intermarry with non-Adamic people and up until the Assyrian captivity they would not inter-marry outside their tribe or the covenant people of Israel. Thus, Joseph choosing Mary for wife would be proof enough that Mary was Adamite and descendants of Abraham, Isaac, Joseph and David. God's law established all of these requirements for a redeemer of Israel and Adam. If any of these are not true, then Jesus Christ is

not qualified to be our redeemer. We will see in later chapters how the rest of Adam's descendants were to be brought back to a covenant relationship and redeemed.

We will discuss the verses of Paul concerning genealogies when we get to them.

## **MATTHEW'S GENEALOGY**

**Matt 1:2-17**

*2 Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren; 3 And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and Phares begat Esrom; and Esrom begat Aram; 4 And Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon; 5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab; and Booz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; 6 And Jesse begat David the king; and David the king begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Urias; 7 And Solomon begat Roboam; and Roboam begat Abia; and Abia begat Asa; 8 And Asa begat Josaphat; and Josaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Ozias; 9 And Ozias begat Joatham; and Joatham begat Achaz; and Achaz begat Ezekias; 10 And Ezekias begat Manasses; and Manasses begat Amon; and Amon begat Josias; 11 And Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon: 12 And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat Zorobabel; 13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor; 14 And Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; 15 And Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; 16 And Jacob begat Joseph the (father) husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ. 17 So all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon are fourteen generations; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ are fourteen generations.*

## **LUKE'S GENEALOGY**

**Luke 3:23-38**

*And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, 24 Which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi, which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Janna, which was the son of Joseph, 5 Which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Amos, which was the son of Naum, which was the son of Esli, which was the son of Nagge, 6 Which was the son of Maath, which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Semei, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Juda, 27 Which was the son of Joanna, which was the son of Rhesa, which was the son of Zorobabel, which was the son of Salathiel, which was the son of Neri, 28 Which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the son of Elmodam, which was the son of Er, 29 Which was the son of Jose, which was the son of Eliezer, which was the son of Jorim, which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi, 30 Which was the son of Simeon, which was the son of Juda, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Jonan, which was the son of Eliakim, 31 Which was the son of Melea, which was the son of Menan, which was the son of Mattatha, which was the son of Nathan, which was the son of David, 32 Which was the son of Jesse, which was the son of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the son of Salmon, which was the son of Naasson, 33 Which was the son of Aminadab, which was the son of Aram, which was the son of Esrom, which*



was the son of Phares, which was the son of Juda, 34 Which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of Isaac, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Thara, which was the son of Nachor, 35 Which was the son of Saruch, which was the son of Ragau, which was the son of Phalec, which was the son of Heber, which was the son of Sala, 36 Which was the son of Cainan, which was the son of Arphaxad, which was the son of Sem, which was the son of Noe, which was the son of Lamech, 37 Which was the son of Mathusala, which was the son of Enoch, which was the son of Jared, which was the son of Maleleel, which was the son of Cainan, 38 Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God.

#### **4. CAESAR AUGUSTUS RULES ROMAN EMPIRE (27 B.C.-A.D. 14)**

### **ANNOUNCEMENTS**

Annunciation to Zacharias about John the Baptist, Oct 10, 7 B.C.

*LUK 1:5 There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judaea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth. 6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. 7 And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in years. 8 And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course, 9 According to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord. 10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense. 11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. 12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him. 13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. 14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. 15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. 16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. 17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. 18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. 19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings. 20 And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season. 21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple. 22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless. 23 And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house. 24 And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying, 25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.*

Many things in the Bible are not always so plain. One of them is about John the Baptist and his relationship to the prophecy concerning Elija.

*MAL 4:5 Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful*

***day of the LORD: 6 And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.***

The message of the angel to Zechariah was:

***Luke 1:17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.***

Jesus put it this way:

***MAT 11:14 And if ye will receive it, this is Elias, which was for to come.***

***MAT 17:10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come?***

***MAT 17:11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.***

***MAT 17:12 But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.***

John the Baptist was Elias in a figurative way because this was not the "Great and Fearful day of the Lord. That will come later.

Please keep in mind as you read these accounts that they all deal with the covenant people. They do not deal with the world population at large. It is important that you realize that the New Testament (Covenant) is a continuation of the Old Covenant. This is not a new God with a new people or a new plan of salvation. This is the fulfillment of Old Testament prophecy concerning God's dealing with Adam and Israel. Since the Bible makes distinction between other races and Adam, then you cannot include all races in what is being applied to Israel and Adam. Since sin is an infraction against God's law, (1 Jo 3:4) those who are not under the law (Gal 4:5) cannot sin because you cannot be held accountable for breaking a law that does not apply to you.

God's dealing with his covenant people is like a husband dealing with his wife. A man and woman get married, always a covenant. Soon children are born. The husband's relationship to the children will never be the same as it is with the wife. Even if the wife breaks the covenant between them, the husband does not, then go and include other children or other women in this covenant marriage. The same is true with God. God was married to Israel. Israel broke the covenant. God divorced Israel. But God did not go get a new wife (a new covenant people).

Yet this is what most Christians are taught and believe. They believe that the Jews are God's only Covenant people. That since the Jews rejected Jesus, then Gentiles became the new covenant people for a while until the Jews are brought back to a covenant relationship. This is absurd! If God changed His plan to redeem all of Israel, then He failed and He does not qualify to be God.

What God really did was to take on Israel/Adam flesh so He could die and resurrect from the grave, become a new person as Christ and re-marry his first wife's daughter, Israel.

She is not called Israel today; she is called "church or Christian". But this new wife is not of non-covenant mixed blood. She is mixed with the remainder of Adam's seed in order to fulfill the promises to Abraham. She is a multitude of Adamic/Israel white nations who were scattered by world empires and they migrated to Europe and America and other places on the globe. These are the people who have spirits, hear the Word, believe, have God indwelling them and have been dominionizing the world for the good of all the population of the world. No non-Adamic

nation in the history of the world has ever sustained the Word of God or Christian laws and principals. Every non-Adamic nation Christianized by modern day missionaries has reverted to darkness when the Adamic/Israelites have been forced by the wicked to leave as rulers. Look at South Africa and a dozen other African nations as well as Haiti.

God created Adam for dominion of the earth, not floating in the sky in a fictionalized heaven. God also created those who are of the cursed heritage to oppose His covenant people that they might be tested and tried.

The whole story of Adam, his descendants, their fall and their redemption is a story of confrontation of the non-covenant population led by the wicked and cursed descendants of Cain and Esau against God's covenant people.

One thing the wicked will not tolerate is "exclusiveness". The leaders of the covenant people have consistently been those who have descended from the cursed seed line of Cain. The first was Cain. He was in the garden and knew God. He hated God, he rejected God and God cursed him and expelled him from Adam and his descendants. He lost the potential for blessing and has led the battle for destruction of God's covenant people ever since.

The second person is Esau. Esau married into the Cain lineage when he married the inhabitants of Edom. He lost his right to the covenant. He too now has been opposing and trying to destroy the covenant people. The one thing that the Cainites and Edomites of today will not tolerate is exclusiveness. For Christians to say, "The only way to God is through Jesus Christ" is a hate statement of anti-Semitism. Cainites and Edomites hate God, hate Christians and hate the gospel. But that is no different than it was in the days of Paul. They tried to kill Paul and they were the power behind Roman persecution of the Christians. This is more than just unbelief my friends. This is genetically motivated hate.

### **Annunciation to Mary about Jesus Christ July 1,6 B.C.**

*LUK 1:26 And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, 27 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. 28 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women. 29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be. 30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God. 31 And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS. 32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: 33 And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. 34 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? 35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God. 36 And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her, who was called barren. 37 For with God nothing shall be impossible. 38 And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.*

### **Virgin Birth**

The virgin birth of Christ is key and core to the whole redemption process of Adam/Israel. The picture of redemption and atonement were embedded in the rituals of the Tabernacle and Temple worship and sacrifices. There had to be a lamb, without blemish, slain and the blood

sprinkled on the mercy seat and altar.

If Jesus Christ was not conceived of a perfect seed, he would be an imperfect lamb and thus an imperfect sacrifice. It takes the power of the Spirit to allow us to have genuine belief that Mary was impregnated by the Holy Spirit and not by an adulterous sexual relation.

The writers of the seed of Cain and Esau do not have this Spirit and faith; therefore their media streams of articles and media continually question, challenge and deny this conception. They continually spin the verbiage of their father from the garden denying what God has said and trying to say what God has not said.

Mary was shocked at this announcement by the angel. She knew very well that it took a man to initiate pregnancy. She knew also that to be pregnant before marriage was the death penalty and much humiliation. She blurted out to the angel that this was not possible since she had never known or had sex with a man.

The angel was very explicit to explain that God Himself would come upon her and plant His seed in her womb. The angel informed Mary of her Aunt Elizabeth who was also miraculously pregnant.

### **His Name**

Jesus or Joshua was the personal name of the son born to Mary by the Holy Spirit. It means Jehovah is Saviour.

***ISA 9:6 For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.***

***ISA 9:7 Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.***

He would be called the "Son of the Most High God".

### **Why He came.**

He was to have the throne of his father (ancestor) David

He was to reign over the House of Jacob forever

His Kingdom would be forever

Pay attention folks. Jesus Christ is not to make a kingdom out of all peoples of the earth. He will make this kingdom out of Jacob Israel, all 13 tribes, not just one or two or three called Jews, mistakenly believed to be derived from the House of Judah (Judah, Levi and Benjamin) by most today.

This is another place where God is telling you why Jesus came. Throne of David. House of Jacob. This is important. Jesus confirms this a little later:

***MAT 10:6 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.***

***MAT 15:24 But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.***

***ACT 2:36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made the same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.***

### **Song of Elizabeth to Mary**

***LUK 1:39 And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill country with haste, into a city of Juda; 40 And entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth. 41 And it came to pass, that, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost: 42 And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb. 43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? 44 For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. 45 And blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.***

The recording of these passages simply confirm the miracle of conception for Mary and Elizabeth. Aunt Elizabeth is 6 months along with John the Baptist when Mary comes in and greets her aunt. The baby John, through the Holy Spirit, recognizes the Christ child in Mary's womb and he leaps or jumps. The Bible in many places expresses jumping as a proper response for joy. So we can conclude that John the Baptist was joyful to know that Christ was soon to be on the scene. John and Jesus were 2<sup>nd</sup> cousins by flesh.

This passage contains the seed of some wonderful promises and expectations for the Christian. All those who are of the Adam/Israel ancestry and especially those who have been born of the spirit are kinfolk and are easily and readily recognizable. The meeting will always produce joy.

The miracle of the growth of North America and Europe is evidence of this truth. As long as the immigrants who came to this country were of the same heritage and faith (Christian), there was generally assimilation and unity. This resulted in the largest, richest and most powerful nation on earth.

By the same token, as we immigrate more and more people of diverse race, cultures, heritage and religion, we greatly endanger the security, the strength and prosperity of our nation. This is called racist and prejudice today because it interferes with the agenda of those of the cursed heritage who desire the destruction of God's covenant people, their nations and God himself.

Elizabeth also seems to have some spiritual insight, primarily from the leaping infant in her womb. She takes up a blessing to Mary and God.

### **The Praise By Mary**

***LUK 1:46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, 47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. 48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed. 49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; and holy is his name. 50 And his mercy is on them that fear him from generation to generation. 51 He hath shewed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. 52 He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree. 53 He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away. 54 He hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of his mercy; 55 As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his seed for ever. 56 And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.***

The importance of this passage is once again to see that Mary understood the nature of what

was happening. She says that, "God hath helped His servant, Israel, as He promised our father Abraham and **His seed forever**". Israel is the servant nation of God to incorporate Adam nations into the covenant and take dominion of the earth.

### **5. Birth and Childhood of John the Baptist Oct 1, 6 B.C.**

*LUK 1:57 Now Elisabeth's full time came that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son. 58 And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her. 59 And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father. 60 And his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John. 61 And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. 62 And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called. 63 And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all. 64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God. 65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judaea. 66 And all they that heard them laid them up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be! And the hand of the Lord was with him. ~67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying, 68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people, 69 And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David; 70 As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began: 71 That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us; 72 To perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant; 73 The oath which he sware to our father Abraham, 74 That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear, 75 In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life. 76 And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways; 77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people by the remission of their sins, 78 Through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the dayspring from on high hath visited us, 79 To give light to them that sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace. 80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.*

### **John's Name**

When John was born, the people assumed he would be called Zechariah after his father. Naming children after their father is an Adamite practice. In fact there are no people on the face of the earth with as good and complete genealogy of names and records as the covenant people of God. The black and oriental races started doing the same after they came into contact with the Adamite covenant race.

One of the legal requirements of receiving legal custody of an inheritance is being able to prove who you are. For that reason, God's people have always kept very good records of their lineage.

Zechariah, who had been dumb of mouth since Elizabeth conceived, was now able to speak and confirm that the son was to be named John. The name means that "God is a gracious giver". God graciously gave Zechariah and Elizabeth a son. God graciously gave Israel a redeemer.

### **Prophecy**

Zechariah began to speak in prophetic words. It is amazing how often God has written and recorded His purposes and yet most theologians and Christians ignore these truths as the babblings of an old fool.

***Blessed is the Lord God of Israel.***

God has never claimed to be the God of any other people.

***AMO 3:2 You only have I known of all the families of the earth: therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities.***

Why

Do preachers and Christians keep trying to make God something He never claimed for Himself, the Covenant God of all people.

***He hath visited and redeemed His people***

Who are His people? It does not say that He has come to redeem all people and make non-covenant people His people, who are not His people.

***House of David***

David had an eternal promise that his seed would sit on the throne forever.) 2Sa 7:16

***Holy prophets since the world began. Luke 1:70***

Don't confuse *world* with *earth*. World comes from the Greek word, *aion*, meaning a period of time. (Since Time began) Earth comes from *erets*, meaning land or physical earth. This world or age began with Adam. The earth has been here for many more centuries and worlds.

Why did Jesus come? Well according to Zechariah, that His people, Israel/Adam could be saved, rescued from their enemies. Well, who are their enemies? The cursed people, who are the *adversary*, who hate us and death, death being the last enemy.

He came to perform the mercy promised to our fathers (Abraham, Isaac and Jacob) and to remember His Holy (set aside) covenant (will, testament, agreement)

Just what was it that God had sworn to and when? The oath.

***Gen 22:16 And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the LORD, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son:***

***Gen 22:17 That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies;***

***18 And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice.***

God expanded the blessing to include all nations (Adamic) of the earth. The covenant was with Abraham and his descendants. It was expanded to all Adam's seed. It was

accomplished by the Assyrian and Babylonian captivities when God sowed His covenant people among the Adamic nations (Hos 2:23) and (Hos 1:10 and Rom 9:26) and they inter married (not with other races) bringing all Adamic people into the covenant. (1 Co 7:13-16) This oath was sworn to Abraham after he had offered his only son, Isaac on Mt Moriah.

While Zechariah had not yet seen the Lord child, he obviously knew the significance of the birth of John the Baptist. He prophesied about Christ and said in verse 77 that Christ would make salvation known to **HIS PEOPLE**.

John the Baptist was kept in the desert until his time for revelation to Israel. Many believed that he was reared and taught in the village of the Essenes East of Jerusalem near Jericho. This is where the Dead Sea Scrolls were found.

### **Annunciation of Joseph of Coming Messiah by Angel.**

***MAT 1:18 Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.***

***19 Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.***

***20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost.***

***21 And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.***

***22 Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,***

***23 Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.***

***24 Then Joseph being raised from sleep did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:***

Again, we have another messenger from God telling us who this miracle child is and why He is coming.

The angel made a special trip to Joseph, who was espoused or engaged to Mary, to prevent him from putting her away for adultery since he had no other explanation for her being pregnant.

The angel of the Lord states several important facts:

That which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost

She shall have a son

You will call Him Jesus

He is here to **SAVE HIS PEOPLE FROM THEIR SIN**.

What sin? The sin of Adam, yes. But also the sin of breaking the covenant by their fathers. Causing them to be divorced from the covenant marriage of God.

This is a fulfillment of Isa 7:14 that a virgin would get pregnant mysteriously without man and He will be the embodiment of God almighty.

This eased his fears and he took Mary to be his wife.

### **BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD OF JESUS**



### **Birth Of Jesus April 1, 5 B.C.**

***LUK 2:1 And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus that all the world should be taxed.***

***2 (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.)***

***3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city.***

***4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because he was of the house and lineage of David:)***

***5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child.***

***6 And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered.***

***7 And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.***

***MAT 1:25 And knew her not till she had brought forth her firstborn son: and he called his name JESUS.***

The word "taxed" is better understood as "census for taxing purposes". Again, we see that this would not have been possible without the records of genealogy kept by God's people. They had to return to the city of their fathers and birth. Bethlehem was the city of David. This further proved that Mary and Joseph were both from the tribe of Judah and the House of David.

The truth is, we do not know the exact date of Jesus' birth or much about the circumstances. I believe that God wanted it that way. All the celebration about Christmas has very little to do with Biblical reality.

December 25<sup>th</sup> was the birthday of the Sun god in the old Egyptian Baal system. This date was the beginning of winter solstice. The shortest day of daylight hours is December 22. The days remain about the same for 2 days and then they begin to get longer on the 24<sup>th</sup> or 25<sup>th</sup>. The gods of Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Greece celebrated the 25th of December long before Christ was born. Rome simply Christianized the Baal system. It has never been Christian. (Doesn't mean that there are not some of God's people ignorantly a part of the Catholic Church.)

The early church did not celebrate the birthday of Jesus. It became an official state holiday in about 300 A.D. when the Roman Empire officially accepted Christianity as the state religion and adapted the pagan temple holidays to Christianity. So this Sun god birthday became the birthday of the Son of God. A similar thing happened to create Easter.

### **Praise of Angels and Homage of Shepherds to Babe in Manger**

***LUK 2:8 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.***

***9 And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.***

***10 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.***

***11 For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.***

***12 And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.***

***13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God,***

*and saying,*

*14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.*

*15 And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.*

*16 And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.*

*17 And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child.*

*18 And all they that heard it wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds.*

*19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart.*

*20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.*

It was general knowledge among all God's people that a messiah was to come. Even the shepherds, the lowest job available, knew and expected this promise to be kept.

The swaddling clothes were not poverty rags. These strips of cloth were the latest medical technique of the day. The strips of good clean cloth were wrapped around the baby tightly to hold the child's rib cage and stomach and even the child's arms and legs so as not to injure itself in excitable movement.

The "*lying in a manger*" was the sign that they had found the right child. This was somewhat unusual. Again though, there is no villain in the innkeeper. It was not an unusual thing among the common man to use the clean areas of the animal stalls in which to live. The innkeeper was giving them the best of what he had left.

One of the false concepts we must get over is that Jesus and His earthly family were in poverty. Certainly His earthly situation was poverty compared to His heavenly abode from which He came. But, Joseph and Mary were not poverty stricken. We will study more on this a little later.

### *3. Circumcision of Jesus April 8, 5 B.C.*

*LUK 2:21 And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.*

### *Presentation in the Temple May 11, 5 B.C.*

*LUK 2:22 And when the days of her purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord;*

*23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord;)*

*24 And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons.*

*25 And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him.*

*26 And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before*

*he had seen the Lord's Christ.*

*27 And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law,*

*28 Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,*

*29 Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word:*

*30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,*

*31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people;*

*32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.*

*33 And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.*

*34 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be spoken against;*

*35 (Yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also,) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.*

*36 And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser: she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginity;*

*37 And she was a widow of about fourscore and four years, which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day.*

*38 And she coming in that instant gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.*

One thing that we must repeat over and over is that Jesus Christ and His earthly parents were faithful and obedient to the law of God and the orderly temple worship and sacrifices. Jesus Christ could not be the redeemer of a people He had chosen and placed under His law, if He was not able or willing to come under the same law. Again, we have confirmation that Jesus Christ came to redeem a specific people, with a specific need. He did not come to keep Roman Law, Greek Law, Oriental Law, African Law or any other law. He was only concerned with the Law of God, His law that had been given to His Covenant people.

This law required the following:

*Gen 17:10-14, Every Male in the Hebrew household, born or bought was to be circumcised. Birth sons to be circumcised on the eighth day.*

*Ex 13:2, Every First-born male is holy unto the Lord.*

*Mother had to present 2 turtle doves or pigeons after 40 days cleansing. (LEV 12:1-8)*

There has been much written about the covenant and circumcision. In Scripture, there are many covenants. But some certain ones of these covenants are mentioned more often and with more importance to God. In this passage, Jesus was circumcised according to the law of the Abrahamic Covenant, not the covenant of Israel at Mt Sinai. This circumcision and covenant is mentioned in Genesis:

*GEN 17:1 And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect.*

*2 And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly.*

*3 And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying,*

*4 As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations.*

*5 Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for*

*a father of many nations have I made thee.*

*6 And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee.*

*7 And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.*

*8 And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.*

*9 And God said unto Abraham, Thou shalt keep my covenant therefore, thou, and thy seed after thee in their generations.*

*10 This is my covenant, which ye shall keep, between me and you and thy seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised.*

*11 And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token of the covenant betwixt me and you.*

*12 And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of thy seed.*

*13 He that is born in thy house, and he that is bought with thy money, must needs be circumcised: and my covenant shall be in your flesh for an everlasting covenant.*

*14 And the uncircumcised man child whose flesh of his foreskin is not circumcised, that soul shall be cut off from his people; he hath broken my covenant.*

*15 And God said unto Abraham, As for Sarai thy wife, thou shalt not call her name Sarai, but Sarah shall her name be.*

This particular covenant from God to Abraham (and it is a one way covenant, not dependent on Abraham) was that God would

Multiply Abraham's seed,

Give Palestine to Abraham and his descendants as the first piece of the earth. This was to be a token of God's promise to give the whole earth to Abraham and his descendants.

Rom 4:13

God would use Abraham and his seed to bless (bring back to be spirit indwelt) the rest of the nations of Adam/Noah's sons. (Sons depends on genetics first. Mixed seed do not count) (Born of water (flesh) and Spirit) John 3:5

In order to do this, Abraham and his people had to have a singleness of gods. Not like the nations around them. In order to do this, Abraham would have to protect his household from these other races and the cursed seed that believed in and practiced false and multiple gods.

God deals with the spiritual, but man mostly deals with the physical. Therefore, God gave Abraham a token, a sign that would be a permanent mark to remind them that they know the one true God and that they were picked by Him for special rule and dominion. This token was flesh circumcision of the males on the 8<sup>th</sup> day after birth. Also, anyone not of their family were to also be circumcised. (These were Adamic people who chose to live under and among the covenant people before the time of the spirit after Pentecost)

This is significantly important. Abraham could bring anyone into his clan as long as they submitted to the law of the house and proved it by submitting to circumcision. If they would not, they were to be killed or exiled. Circumcision was a sign of the law of God being applied.

To circumcise the men was to make a commitment to teach and practice the law of God

in the household. Foreigners (Adamic) could come into the household, but they were to live by the law of God. Part of that law included who could be rulers and priests.

Foreigners were not of equal right in these areas. They could participate in every aspect of worship except the eating of the sacrifice from the altar or entering the tabernacle. This agrees with the teaching that redemption and atonement was only for those of Adam/Israel.

Our nation was prosperous and safe as long as everyone coming to America was expected to learn English and accept the God of the Israelites. Our nation has degenerated since allowing foreign cultures to keep their languages, cultures and false gods.

Jesus Christ was flesh circumcised showing that his parents would raise him in the history and Law of the Hebrews, not Jewish law. (Traditions of men) Matt 15:3 Remember that Jesus attacked the Jews for their laws.

**Jews followed the tradition of the elders of Zion**

***MAT 15:2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.***

***3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?***

***6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.***

***MAR 7:3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.***

***5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?***

***8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.***

***9 And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.***

***13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.***

***GAL 1:14 And profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.***

***COL 2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ***

***1PE 1:18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers;***

Even Paul speaks of these traditions as a hindrance to truth. These traditions are still taught by the Jews today from the Talmud. Christians don't realize that modern day Jews are not Hebrews, nor do they believe the Old Testament or the New Testament. Judaism is a false religion just like Muslim, Buddha, Hindu, etc. To call the modern day Jew, God's chosen or Covenant people is a gross lack of knowledge.

You say, well these Jews still circumcise their males. That was being done by many people before Abraham and is being done today by Arabs and many other religions.

Circumcision was the main drawing of blood with which to sign and seal covenants for centuries.

### **LAW OF BIRTH CLEANSING**

***LEV 12:1 And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, 2 Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, If a woman have conceived seed, and born a man child: then she shall be unclean seven days; according to the days of the separation for her infirmity shall she be unclean.***

***3 And in the eighth day the flesh of his foreskin shall be circumcised.***

***4 And she shall then continue in the blood of her purifying three and thirty days; she shall touch no hallowed thing, nor come into the sanctuary, until the days of her purifying be fulfilled.***

***5 But if she bear a maid child, then she shall be unclean two weeks, as in her separation: and she shall continue in the blood of her purifying threescore and six days.***

***6 And when the days of her purifying are fulfilled, for a son, or for a daughter, she shall bring a lamb of the first year for a burnt offering, and a young pigeon, or a turtledove, for a sin offering, unto the door of the tabernacle of the congregation, unto the priest:***

***7 Who shall offer it before the LORD, and make an atonement for her; and she shall be cleansed from the issue of her blood. This is the law for her that hath born a male or a female.***

***8 And if she be not able to bring a lamb, then she shall bring two turtles, or two young pigeons; the one for the burnt offering, and the other for a sin offering: and the priest shall make an atonement for her, and she shall be clean.***

Mary, the mother of Jesus waited the seven days required by the law of God and then took Jesus for circumcision. She then waited the 33 days required by law and returned herself for offering of the sin sacrifice. The law required a lamb, but if the family was too poor or was in a position not to have a lamb, they could offer two turtle doves or two pigeons. This is what Mary did.

There are many comments by different theologians about why the woman was required to bring a sin offering after the birth of a child. But the most logical was to be a reminder to the woman of the fact that sorrow in childbearing was the consequence of the woman's part in bringing Adam to sin. Gen 3:16-17. While the woman did not bring sin into the world, Adam did that, she played a part in influencing him to sin.

### **VISIT OF THE WISE MEN, 4 B.C.**

***MAT 2:1 Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,***

***2 Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.***

***3 When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.***

***4 And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.***

***5 And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet,***

***6 And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda:***

*for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.*

*7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.*

*8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.*

*9 When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.*

*10 When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.*

*11 And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh.*

*12 And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.*

Note: Excerpt from *öThe Ten Lost Tribes By: Collins*

The first such event was the coming of the Magi, or "Wise Men" to pay homage to Jesus. We read of this event in Matthew 2:1-12, which becomes more important when, considered in the overall context of Roman Parthian relations.

The Magi were powerful members of one of the two assemblies, which elected Parthian monarchs and wielded great influence within the empire. One assembly was composed of members of the royal family (the Arsacids), and the other consisted of the priests ( "Magi") and influential Parthians of non-royal blood (the "Wise Men). The Magi and Wise Men were jointly known as the öMegistanesö.

The King James Version of the Bible states in Matthew 2:1 that "wise men from the east" came to worship Jesus. The term "Wise Men," can be seen as the proper title of Parthian Megistanes. The Greek word translated "wise men" is "magian," literally meaning "Persian astronomer or priest."" Parthia had long governed all Persian territory at the time of Christ, and the "Wise Men" cited in the Bible were clearly members of the Megistanes, very high Parthian officials.

While traditional Christian accounts of this episode celebrate the coming of "the three wise men," the Bible does not limit the number of visiting Magi/Wise Men to three men. Indeed, Biblical events and the realities of that time argue for a much larger contingent of Parthian Magi.

Proofs exist to show that the Parthians were descended from the ten tribes of Israel and that their priests were likely descended from the tribe of Levi, this delegation of Magi consisted of leading members of the ten tribes of Israel. Since there were numerous members of the tribe of Judah in Parthia's empire, they may have been represented as well. Consequently, the delegation of Magi could easily have consisted of at least ten or twelve men representing the various tribes of Israel.

Also, the Bible shows that the Magi did not visit the young Jesus in the manger at Bethlehem (as most nativity scenes depict), but rather visited Jesus in a house somewhat after his birth. Matthew 2:11 states that this visit of the Magi took place in a house (not at the manger) when Jesus was old enough to be called "a young child (no longer "an infant in swaddling clothes"). Luke's version of Christ's birth (Luke 2:8-40) mentions the shepherds' arrival at the manger, but makes no mention of any Magi visiting Christ at that time.

Matthew 2:8 adds that Herod sent the Magi "to Bethlehem" after conferring with the Jewish hierarchy about the prophesied location of the Messiah's birth. They cited Micah 5:2 that the

Messiah would originate in Bethlehem, and they were likely familiar with Daniel 9:25-26 which predicted that the arrival of the Messiah was due at that time. Armed with this information,

Herod then privately met with the Parthian delegation, and enquired when "the star" which they followed had first appeared. He apparently learned that this period of time was almost two years because he killed all male children in Bethlehem under two years of age in an attempt to kill the Messiah (whom he regarded as a competitor for his position as king of the Jews (Judeans)).

Although the Bible tells us that "the star" appeared to the Wise Men almost two years prior to his birth, this offers inexact information in determining how old Jesus was when the Wise Men came to him. Since the Wise Men were prominent people in Parthia at the time of the arrival of "the star," they had to make a very time-consuming journey to reach Judea. Also, it took time to prepare the costly gifts to present to the Messiah, set their affairs in order for a long absence, organize a caravan (and likely obtain an armed escort for protection) and make the lengthy journey to Judea, a journey which moved at the speed of the slowest pack animal in the caravan. Since the "star" may have appeared to the Wise Men prior to Jesus' birth, Jesus may have been a few months (or up to two years) old at the time of the Magi's arrival.

Consider also that Matthew 2:1-3 states:

***"Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem. Saying, where is he that is born King of the Jews (Judeans)? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him. When Herod the king heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. "***

This account does not indicate that three wise men from the east quietly visited Herod, then Jesus, and then just as quietly left Judah to return to Parthia. Their arrival in Jerusalem was a very public affair because "all Jerusalem" was "troubled" by their arrival. This indicates that the Magi (a delegation of a dozen or more high Parthian officials) came to Jerusalem in a caravan loaded with costly treasures and escorted by a strong force of armed Parthian soldiers. Since the Magi were high officials of the Parthian government, it would customarily travel with a substantial escort of Parthian soldiers to guarantee their protection. Since they were traveling with many costly treasures to present to the new-born Messiah, the escort may have been unusually large.

Also, these high officials would have traveled with a large entourage of servants, animal-handlers, cooks, etc. on such a long journey. The entourage in this Parthian caravan may have constituted many hundreds of people! Given the fact that many high Parthian officials and very expensive treasures were in the caravan, there may have been many thousands of Parthian soldiers escorting the caravan.

This is not an overstatement. Josephus records that treasure caravans bringing expensive offerings to Jerusalem from Jews living in Parthian territory did so with "many ten thousand men" as escorts. In ancient times, traveling with expensive items was dangerous. There was danger not only from brigands, but from local satraps who might use their armies to conquer a treasure train passing through their territories. If Jewish commoners from Parthia were allowed to travel to Jerusalem with the equivalent several infantry divisions as escorts, would an important delegation of Parthia's ruling class and a treasure train of gifts have been accompanied by fewer armed escorts?

The Wise Men who came to Jesus were not bringing just samples of gold and other precious



things that they carried in personal saddlebags. They were coming to worship he who was born "king" of the Jews (Judeans or Judeites). This Parthian delegation was offering tribute money to a "king," and therefore would more likely have brought a whole of pack animals loaded with "gold, frankincense and myrrh."

Their caravan was so big that their arrival quickly became cause *célèbre* in Jerusalem. The whole city was in an uproar over their arrival, and that argues for a very visible and impressive Parthian caravan arriving in Jerusalem not long after Jesus' birth in Bethlehem. The sheer size of the caravan, its treasures and its escorts awed King Herod and the whole city to the point they were all "troubled."

This indicates that the Parthian caravan had so many armed escorts that many feared it was an invasion force coming to besiege Jerusalem. However, their announced reason for coming to visit the Messiah stunned a city of Jews which intensely wanted the Messiah to come and free them from Roman rule! It is clear that the Jewish hierarchy understood the Parthians were looking for the Messiah as they quickly looked for messianic prophecies to locate the city of his birth.

After their consultations with Herod and high Jewish officials, the Parthian delegation traveled to worship Jesus and present their gifts to him (by this time, Matthew 2:11 states Jesus and Mary were living in "a house," so they were no longer in the manger). Herod's spies would have closely followed their journey.

Joseph was then warned by God in a dream to flee into Egypt (Matthew 2:13) to avoid Herod's impending slaughter of Bethlehem's young male children. Since Herod's edict applied only to Bethlehem, there would have been no need for Joseph, Mary and Jesus to flee unless they were still in Bethlehem. Going to Egypt took them completely out of Herod's area of jurisdiction.

Herod made the mistake of assuming the Messiah would be born to a family native to the Bethlehem area. However, Luke 2:4 shows that although the family into which Jesus was born resided in Galilee, they had to journey to Bethlehem at that time to comply with a taxing edict because they were direct descendants of King David.

Since Luke 2:39 states that Joseph, Mary and Jesus returned to Galilee not long after Jesus was born, and doesn't even mention the Egyptian trip, it seems apparent that the stay of Joseph, Mary and Jesus in Egypt was brief. Indeed, since history records that Herod ("Herod the Great") died in 4 B.C. and Matthew 2:14-19 states that Jesus and his parents returned from Egypt as soon as Herod was dead (4 B.C.). Herod must have died soon after he gave the order to slay the male children in Bethlehem.

A comment must be made concerning the "star" which led the Magi to Jesus. Some have proposed that this star was a comet celestial phenomenon although the context shows that this was not possible. The biblically described star led the Magi over a long east-to-west route from Parthia to Judea, and Matthew 2:9 states it finally "stood over where the young child was." No comet or celestial phenomenon could pinpoint a single city, much less an individual child within a particular house.

The Bible periodically uses the word "star" to represent an angel (Job 38:7, Rev. 1:20), and there is every reason to believe that this "star" which led a delegation of Parthian nobles to a specific child in a specific house in Judea was an angel of God. Nothing else makes sense. Only an angel (a spirit being) could literally "stand over" the baby Jesus to designate one specific child to the Parthian nobles.

Also, there is nothing in the biblical account which indicates that this "star" was visible to anyone other than the Magi (Wise Men)! Matthew 2:2 states that the Magi saw "the star," but the

context indicates no one else ever saw it. Verse 7 shows Herod asking the Magi when "the star" appeared to them, indicating no one in Judea was aware of any such "star." If there had been some unusual celestial object in the sky, Herod and his astrologers would already have known the exact date on which it had appeared.

After leading the Parthians to Judea, the angel ("star") disappeared, forcing the Parthians to ask Herod for directions.

After the Magi left Herod, the "star" again appeared to them, led them directly to Bethlehem (Matthew 2:9), and "stood over" the young child, Jesus to set him apart from all others. Verse 10 states the Magi rejoiced that the star was again showing them the way they should follow. Obviously, a "star" which appeared, disappeared and reappeared for the Magi (but which was apparently not seen by any other humans) was an angel. Supporting this fact is that Luke 2:8-15 records that the birth of Jesus was announced to shepherds by angels speaking to them out of a heavenly light which accompanied their appearance. Since God used angels to bring the shepherds to Jesus' manger, it follows he also used an angel to lead the Magi to Jesus.

Having found Jesus, the Magi worshipped him, offering rich gifts of gold, myrrh and frankincense. They then were warned by God in a dream (Matthew 2:12) not to return to Herod, resulting in the prompt exit of the Magi and their escorts from Judea. When Herod realized that he had been fooled, he wrathfully killed all the young male children of Bethlehem in a vain effort to kill the Messiah. However, there is no record that he made any attempt to overtake or punish the Magi. As high Parthian nobles, they had "diplomatic immunity," and Herod dared not anger Caesar by provoking the Parthians. Also, the size of the Magi's armed escort apparently dissuaded Herod from attempting to pursue them.

There is another important aspect of this remarkable episode. While it is not surprising that Jewish leaders during Herod's reign were sufficiently familiar with the prophetic writings to pinpoint for Herod where the Messiah would be born, it is surprising that God was working more closely with members of the Parthian ruling class than he was with the Jewish priests! This makes no biblical sense unless (A) the Parthians were descended from the exiled tribes of the House of Israel and (B) the Magi (Parthian priests) were Levites. During his ministry Jesus Christ himself asserted that he was sent only to the descendants of the Israelites. (Matthew 15:24-28 shows the reluctance of Jesus to assist a non-Israelite.) Throughout the Old Testament God worked almost exclusively with the House of Israel and the House of Judah; his involvement with other nations was incidental (i.e. using them to punish his people when they sinned). The fact that God was working intimately with the Parthian nobility confirms that the Parthians were the House of Israel in Asia and supports the conclusion that the Parthian Magi (their priests were Levites).

The fact that some of the Parthian ruling classes worshippers of the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob is revealing. That God himself sent an angel to lead them to Jesus gave instructions to the Magi via dreams is further revealing. God obviously considered these Parthians to be "righteous" men under terms of his laws or he would not have been dealing with them personally. That educated Parthians were ready to visit and worship the Messiah at the time of Christ's birth indicates they were familiar with the prophecies of the Old Testament. Who but transplanted Israelites would have been looking for the Messiah at that time?

### **FLIGHT TO EGYPT AND DEATH OF HEROD THE GREAT**

***MAT 2:13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into***

*Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.*

*14 When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:*

*15 And was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son.*

*16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men.*

*17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying,*

*18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.*

Here, we have a similar command to the one given in Exodus. Herod found out in his conversation with the visiting royalty that the Christ had been born in Bethlehem within the last two years. Since the Royal visitors were warned not to communicate with Herod of the child's whereabouts, Herod, in his genetic Edomite mold reacted with violence. He ordered every male child under two years of age to be slaughtered. His design was to kill the Christ child even if it took all the other male babies in death to do it. In his mind, it was better to be a notorious king rather than not to be king at all.

This re-established the genetic pattern of the cursed seed:

They live by their sword, violence, war, blood shed

They must rule or control those who rule or be at war with rulers.

In reviewing 6,000 years of history from Adam until now, it is fairly easy to trace all world governments, war and mass killings to those who are of this genetic seed, Cain and Esau. Herod was a descendant of both. He was a bloody man.

The Christ child is about two years old here and God warns Joseph to flee to Egypt. It is interesting, I think, to look at the times, God's great men have had to flee to Egypt. Abraham fled to Egypt. (Gen 12:10), Isaac would have gone to Egypt, but God told him not to go. (Gen 26:2). Again, Jeremiah was kidnapped by the rebellious Israelites and carried to Egypt against God's orders. They were all killed except Jeremiah and his family. (Jer 43:2)

Egypt is a type of the world. Every time God's people went to Egypt for protection, they got judgment, unless God sent them. Now, Joseph was being told to go to Egypt to protect the life of Jesus Christ from Herod.

What happened next is almost too horrible for most Christians to believe. In fact, I am convinced that modern day Christians really don't believe that such a thing could happen. There have been many times over the past 2000 years where similar things have happened.

In the 11<sup>th</sup> and 12<sup>th</sup> centuries under the Spanish inquisition, the Catholic Church literally ripped babies from the wombs of mothers, hanged preachers, burned children alive at the stake, and slaughtered hundreds of thousands of innocent men, women and children because they refused to bow to the Roman church, as to God.

In more modern days, under Hitler, there were hundreds of thousands of Christians and Orthodox Jews imprisoned, separated from family and killed or starved.

In 1917 there was mass killing of Christians in Russia as the Jewish backed revolution for Communism took over.

In China, Mao Tse Tung killed so many of his own people who would not bow to him that the main river was covered for days with floating bodies and the water ran red.

In Africa, time after time brutal civil wars have raged killing millions of men women and children in churches, in the streets and in their homes.

Continued next Month

In South Africa, the blacks were incited to riot against the whites until millions of both were killed and Mandela exercised the most cruel of death upon their own countrymen. Now Mr. Mandela is the president of the country. What is behind this? Who is behind this? In every case, there are key Canaanite/Edomite genetically cursed seed playing key roles in making decisions by and for the leaders.

Christians in America and Europe are naive. For the most part American Christians believe that these evil leaders are just lost and sinners who need to be saved and born again. They believe that if these leaders would profess faith in Christ, they would turn into loving children of God.

Let me remind you that in Africa, South Africa and many other countries, the enemy professed faith in Christ, infiltrated the church and we have actual eye witness accounts of these false professors leading the church people into the church buildings to be executed and burned with the church.

What Christians must learn is that there is a people, who are genetically created for the wrath of God. (Rom 9:22) These people cannot be saved or regenerated. (John 8:37)

Joseph had to remove Jesus, the baby, from the destruction that the evil Edomite Herod wanted to bring upon Him. There will be several times when Jesus Christ will make defensive moves to save His life, that He would not have otherwise made. Jesus Christ came at a specific time for a specific task. He came to die on a specific date for a specific purpose. If He died on any other date in any other manner than He did, He would have had to start all over again. It was imperative that Christ not die before His time for the atonement and redemption of His people. The law had to be followed to the letter.

### **FROM EGYPT TO NAZARETH**

***MAT 2:19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,***

***20 Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young child's life.***

***21 And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.***

***22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judaea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:***

***23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.***

***LUK 2:39 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.***

Herod's son followed him on the throne. Joseph knew the connection. Herod was an Edomite, so is his son. The hatred of Herod the father will be carried out in the hatred of the son.

Because of this, Joseph went past Jerusalem, past Bethlehem on to the next village of size, Nazareth in Galilee where Benjamin and other Israelites, not Jews, dwelt.

There is no specific prophecy that declares the Christ to be called a Nazarene. At least, it has not been found in the Old or New Testament yet. Nazareth was a town of contempt.

***JOH 1:46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.***

Galilee was also a land of contempt by the Jews.

***JOH 7:41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?***

When Philip introduced Christ the Messiah as coming from Nazareth, Nathaniel spoke in rebuke about Nazareth. It was a proverb of all those who were prophets to say that Christ would come from a town the people considered contemptible. It was because Nazareth was contemptible that the Edomite king would never think to look there for the King of Kings. God always uses the low things of the earth to confound the wise.

### **CHILDHOOD AT NAZARETH**

***LUK 2:40 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon him.***

There are two errors that are commonly accepted by Christians today with which I will eventually deal. One is the belief that Jesus Himself was a carpenter. The second is that Jesus grew up in Nazareth until He was 30 and entered His ministry. Neither of these is true, nor are they even hinted at in Scripture. These errors have grown from the fact that Joseph was a carpenter and the belief that Jesus was at home from age 12 to 30. We will show indisputable evidence that Jesus was not at home from age 12 to 30, but was about His father's business traveling the world by ship with His uncle, Joseph of Arimathea. .

### **9. JESUS TO JERUSALEM AT AGE 12**

***LUK 2:41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover.***

***42 And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast.***

***43 And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not of it.***

***44 But they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.***

***45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.***

***46 And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.***

***47 And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers.***

***48 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son,***

*why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.*

*49 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?*

*50 And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.*

### **EIGHTEEN YEARS SPENT AT NAZARETH?**

*LUK 2:51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.*

*52 And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man.*

## **11. THE LIFE OF CHRIST FROM AGE 12 TO 30**

Is it not incongruous that while Jesus Christ is the central character of the New Testament, nothing is written concerning the majority of his life? The Bible tells us a little about his first twelve years, a lot about his last three and one-half years, but nothing about an eighteen year span between ages twelve and thirty.

Luke 3:23 observes that Jesus was "*about 30*" when he became a public figure in Judea due to the advent of his ministry, but where had he been and what had he done in the intervening eighteen years? Since the Bible makes no direct comment about this period of time, we must rely on non-Biblical sources for information about "missing years."

The New Testament's silence about these eighteen years of Jesus' life is significant. Since Luke 1:2 states that the gospel narratives of Jesus' life were eyewitness accounts, it implies the gospel writers had not witnessed any of the events of Jesus' adult life before age thirty. This further implies that Jesus was not present in Palestine during the "missing" eighteen years. If he had been living in Judea or Galilee, it would have been impossible to hide such a precocious youth who had been worshipped by foreign nobility as a child, and who had awed the Temple's rulers with his brilliance at age twelve. Did the spiritual power that was manifesting itself in Jesus at age twelve go dormant for eighteen years? Did Jesus "quench the spirit" at age twelve so he could live as an obscure Galilean carpenter for eighteen years? That is highly unlikely. Indeed, the event at the Temple indicates that Jesus was in the process of separating from his parents to pursue the divine mission that he had been born to fulfill. It is the contention of this book that soon after the Temple incident, Jesus left Palestine altogether for eighteen years. There is biblical evidence supporting such a conclusion.

The account of Matthew 13:54-56 indicates that after this eighteen year period, Jesus was scarcely remembered in his own home town. Whereas, at age twelve, Jesus is amazing the teachers in the Jerusalem Temple with his wisdom, the common folk in his home town synagogue are asking themselves eighteen years later (after hearing Jesus speak): 'Where did this man (Jesus) get this wisdom?' If the uncommon wisdom of Jesus had been present in Nazareth for those eighteen years, such a question would have been ludicrous. Note also verses 55-56 where the listeners ask: "*Isn't this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? and his sisters, are they not all with us?*" This indicates that the members of his home town synagogue were struggling to identify or remember who Jesus was. The fact that they easily named all his immediate family members, and said "*are they not all with us?*" indicates that Jesus had not been "with them" as were his other family members. Their quizzical response to Jesus indicates that while Jesus had been gone from Nazareth for a long time, his immediate family members had remained there in the community. Obviously, if Jesus had been a hard-working carpenter in Nazareth all his life, the local citizenry would have easily recognized him. Yet they spoke as having never previously witnessed either his wisdom or power!

Jesus' wisdom had awed the most learned Jewish leaders in the nation at age twelve! To believe that Jesus lived the next eighteen years in Nazareth as a "humble carpenter" while showing no wisdom at all

until age thirty, one has to believe that for eighteen years Jesus "quenched" the Holy Spirit that was burning brightly in him at age twelve! Christians are forbidden in I Thessalonians 5:19 to "quench the spirit." Did Jesus do what Christians are forbidden to do? Hardly! Yet traditional dogma (that Jesus lived inconspicuously in Nazareth until age thirty) advocates just such a view.

The logical conclusion is that Jesus did not work as a carpenter in Nazareth during the "missing eighteen years." In fact, the Bible offers no statement that Jesus was ever employed as a carpenter during his adult life. Matthew 13:55 refers to Jesus as a "carpenter's son," not as a "carpenter." Luke's account about Jesus' meeting with the Temple elders at age 12 records Jesus declaring that his future was not linked to the profession of his physical father, but with the calling of his spiritual Father in heaven. When his parents chided Jesus for being in the Temple rather than with them, Jesus replied ***"know you not that I must be about my Father's business?"*** This does not portray Jesus as a "rebel" since verse 51 shows that he was an obedient youth, but it shows that as early as age twelve, God's Spirit was drawing Jesus away from the carpenter "business" of Joseph, toward the spiritual "business" of God.

As a child growing up in a carpenter's household, Jesus was certainly familiar with carpentry, but the Bible does not assert that He was a carpenter in Nazareth during the "missing years." Mark's account of Jesus' visit to his old home synagogue (Mark 6:1-6) quote townsfolk as calling Jesus a "carpenter." However, these are the same townsfolk who struggled to identify Jesus, as the context confirms. Note that the Bible itself does not declare "Jesus was a carpenter," but rather quotes the comments of those who did not know him very well. That some hometown folk would call him a "carpenter" is consistent with the likelihood that Jesus had been a carpenter's apprentice to Joseph when they had last seen him.

This passage also declares that Jesus had four brothers at least two sisters. Jesus was an oldest son in a family of at least siblings. Whatever the number of siblings, it is clear that Mary had a large family after Jesus was born.

The Bible never mentions Joseph, the stepfather of Jesus the episode of Jesus after the episode of Jesus being in the Temple at age twelve. Since the mother of Jesus, and the siblings of Jesus are cited as living in Nazareth when Jesus is 30 years old and Joseph is not mentioned, it is apparent that Joseph died during those "missing years." Since, Joseph of Arimathea was already spending a lot of time with Jesus at age twelve, he likely became Jesus' guardian after Joseph died. Joseph of Arimathea was surely a good role model for Jesus as Luke 23:5 to him as "good" and "just." Given the fact that Joseph of Arimathea was a man of prominence in the Jewish community, and Jesus' precocious wisdom was known to the Temple elders in his pre-teen years, how is it possible that no record of Jesus' activities in Palestine exists for the missing eighteen years of Jesus' life? The logical answer is that he was not present in Palestine during that time!

Ordinarily, with the death of a father, the oldest son (even a young one like Jesus) would have been compelled to begin working for a living to support the family. However, since Joseph of Arimathea was a wealthy relative (who could guarantee the economic health of the family), Jesus was free to pursue his real calling in life. Also, Parthian Magi had lavished gifts of gold, frankincense, and myrrh upon Jesus when they had visited him shortly after his birth. Since this large sum of wealth would have been held "in trust" for him by either his parents or Joseph of Arimathea, Jesus could have tapped that wealth to provide for his family's needs without having to work as a carpenter.

In *The Traditions of Glastonbury*, E. Raymond Capt cites evidence that Joseph of Arimathea was an international merchant involved with the tin trade in the British Isles. Earlier chapters of this book documented that the British Isles were Israelite regions since at least the reign of Solomon. Also, chapter four presented evidence that large bodies of the tribes of Simeon and Dan entered Britain and Ireland around 721 B.C. when ancient Israel fell to Assyria, adding more Israelites to the population base of the British Isles. It is hardly surprising that Joseph of Arimathea, a prominent member of the tribe of Judah, would be trading with people descended from the other tribes of Israel.

Capt cites the account of Gildas Badonicus (an early British historian of the sixth century A.D.) which refers to Joseph of Arimathea as a *"nobilis decurio."* The very fact that an early historian of Britain discusses Joseph of Arimathea at all gives weight to accounts that Joseph was involved with the events of early Britain. Capt asserts that Joseph's role was as follows:

"The same title '*Decurio*' applied to Joseph of Arimathaea is used by St. Jerome in his translation of the Vulgate of St. Mark's 'honorable counselor' (Mark 15:43) and St. Luke's 'counselor.' (Luke 23:50) In the Roman world, a '*decurio*' denoted an important Roman office, usually connected with the general management of a mining district. The implication is that Joseph was in charge of Rome's mining interests in Britain. Such a position would require Joseph to spend a considerable amount of time away from his homeland. "21

Indeed, Joseph had to be a prominent man in the Roman world to receive immediate access to Pilate, the Roman administrator of Judea, during the intense political turmoil surrounding the crucifixion (Mark 15:43-45). Unless Joseph of Arimathaea was both known to and trusted by Pilate and the Roman rulers of Judea, he would not have been allowed swift access to Pontius Pilate at so sensitive and critical a time. Capt also states that during that period, both Roman and Jewish law called for the disposal of the bodies of criminals in common pits with all memory of them removed, unless the body was promptly claimed by a relative. The fact that Joseph of Arimathaea came forward to claim Jesus' body is convincing evidence, that he was a relative of Jesus. That he obtained such approval not by going to a lower official, but to Pilate himself, indicates that he was used to doing business with the highest Roman officials.

However, what of the activities of Joseph of Arimathaea and Jesus during the "missing eighteen years?" If Jesus were under Joseph Arimathaea's tutelage during those years, he would have spent considerable time traveling, given that Joseph's business involved international trade between the nations of that day. While information which follows is based on legends and traditions, they are buttressed by the Bible's implication that Jesus was absent from Palestine for a prolonged period of time. Obviously, Jesus was somewhere during that time, and legends and traditions offer the only evidence that exists.

Many traditions assert that Joseph of Arimathaea and Jesus was not only present in Britain, but had homes in the area of Glastonbury England. Supporting these traditions, Capt cites evidence that Glastonbury bore two titles from ancient times - "*Secretum Domini* and "*Domus Dei*" (Latin for "The Secret of the Lord," and "The House of God"). William Steuart McBirnie, in his book, The Search for Twelve Apostles, also wrote concerning these traditions:

"There certainly is no other tradition known concerning the history of St. Joseph of Arimathaea and since the British tradition is vigorous we see no reason to challenge it ... If in any country there is a strong tradition concerning some Apostolic figures, and no counter tradition elsewhere, then we at least stand on the ground of possibility and even probability. So is with ... St. Joseph. "

Capt also lists a fifteenth century document that Joseph of Arimathaea converted King Arviragus of first century A.D. Britain to the Christian religion, and that this early king in Britain gave Joseph and his party twelve portions of tax-free land in the area of Glastonbury. This tax-free land in Glastonbury is confirmed in the Domesday Book of early English history under the title "*Domus Dei* The fact that there were twelve portions of land is significant God inspire this symbolism ... one portion for each of the twelve tribes of Israel?

Another fact cited by Capt is that the Druids worshiped a "trinity" of gods "known as 'Beli,' the Creator as regards the 'Taran,' the controlling providence of the present, and Yesu coming saviour of the future." The name "Beli" preserves a Hebrew word for "Lord", and in its expectation of a coming "Yesu" savior "Druidism thus anticipated Christianity and pointed to the coming savior under the very name by which Christ was called." The name "Jesus" is from the Greek, but the Hebrew name of Jesus was likely "Yeshuah," meaning "salvation." The presence of Hebrew words in Britain's Druidic religion indicates that it had some roots in the religion of the ancient Israelites. This is logical given the dominant presence of Israelites in Britain throughout the first millennium B.C.

Other ancient legends assert that Jesus traveled as far east as India and Nepal. There is a biblical basis for legends that Jesus could have traveled both in the British Isles, and as far into Asia as India. In Matthew 15:24, Jesus said: "I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the House of Israel." The House of Israel refers to the ten tribes of Israel who have been identified as including the early Britons, the



Sacae/Saka Scythians; and the Parthians in Asia. Since the area of Parthian/Saka dominance extended as far as India, groups of the ten tribes of Israel could be found that far into Asia. Since Jesus said he was "sent" to those ten tribes, it is logical that he travelled to where the various tribes of the House of Israel lived in the first century A.D. Since the British Isles and even portions of India (at the eastern edge of Parthia's empire) were then inhabited by the tribes of Israel, Jesus' presence among these people would be a fulfillment of that scripture.

As seen earlier, Jesus lived during a period of peace between Parthia and Rome. During this period, trade flourished between the merchants of both empires. Rawlinson records that this trade was "considerable," and that merchants brought "various metals and numerous manufactured articles" from Rome into Parthia. Given the indications that Joseph of Arimathea was involved in the Roman mining (metals) trade, and that Joseph's homeland in Judea was ideally located to facilitate exports into Parthia and Asia via overland trade routes, it is likely that Joseph's business included the export of metal products into Parthia and Asia. As Jesus grew, he likely became a trusted member of Joseph's international trading business. Who could possibly be better suited than Jesus to supervise Joseph's business trade with Parthian territories? Jesus had already been worshipped by members of the Magi, the Parthian ruling elite! Jesus was assured of a very warm reception in Parthia due to the Magi's favor, and would have been given access to any portion of Parthia's sphere of influence that he wished to visit. Jesus' participation in Joseph's international trading business gave him an ideal opportunity to visit those regions to which the ten tribes of Israel had migrated (Briton, Parthia, Scythia and other Asian locations).

One other possibility exists. Earlier chapters have shown that both the Israelite/Phoenician and the Carthaginian Empires of the first millennium B.C. planted colonies of Israelites in North America.

It was also shown that some Carthaginians likely fled North Africa to seek refuge in their North American colony after the fall of Carthage. We also have evidence that this Punic colony in No America lasted until about 500 A.D., so there was a significant Israelite civilization in North America during the life of Christ. Since Christ was visiting the regions of the earth inhabited by descendants of the ten tribes, could he have visited ancient No America as well? The surprising answer may be "Yes!"

Consider the Quetzalcoatl legends of the ancient New World. While "Quetzalcoatl" is usually depicted as a serpent god, the legends record that some Quetzalcoatl legends are quite different.

In *Voyages to the New World*, Nigel Davies includes compilation of various Quetzalcoatl legends. These legends include the assertions that Quetzalcoatl "had a white skin and ... was traditionally expected to return ... but once only, in human form," that amid the lamentations of his people, Quetzalcoatl thereafter set out on his long journey to the place in the East where he was destined to meet his end," that "he rose to heaven and entered therein," and that "he remained four days in the land of the dead and, on the eighth day, reappeared as the Morning Star. Davies also comments that Quetzalcoatl is depicted as being a "god in human form," and he was the "creator God". It is also significant that the humanized Quetzalcoatl legends appear only in the Christian era.

There are additional Peruvian legends about a deity named Viracocha, who "departed across the sea," but was "destined to return." Viracocha is also portrayed in Spanish sources "like Quetzalcoatl - as a benevolent figure who traveled from place to place, preaching repentance and performing miracles. Charles Boland's book, *They All Discovered America*, adds that first Quetzalcoatl is said to have sprung from a virgin birth."

Old World legends about a human-deity who was a benevolent white (Semitic) person, preached repentance, performed miracles and was both divine and human at the same time, was born of a virgin was from the Old World, took a long journey to the East (across Atlantic toward the Old World) on a mission of self-sacrifice, was dead, but was resurrected and rose to heaven, and who would return at a future time unmistakably point to one (and only one) historic person: Jesus Christ. Indeed, many of the doctrines about humanized Quetzalcoatl parallel Christian teachings about Jesus Christ! Even Quetzalcoatl's title (the "Morning Star"), is one of Jesus Christ's biblical titles (Revelation 22:16). The many Christian themes attached to the early Quetzalcoatl strongly indicate that humanized Quetzalcoatl represented Jesus Christ who visited the New World during the "lost" years of his life. These ancient New

World legends even record that he returned to the Old World aware of the destiny of self-sacrifice that was ahead of him.

The fanciful legends depicting Quetzalcoatl as a serpent god do not, of course, apply to Jesus Christ. Since Satan is depicted as a "serpent" in the Bible (Genesis 3:1-13, Revelation 12:9-15), it is apparent that the worship of Quetzalcoatl was subverted from biblical themes into a form of Satan-worship (even including rites of human sacrifice). The separate legendary figure of Viracocha may also be based on Jesus Christ, or even one of the Apostles who were sent by Christ to "all nations" (Matthew 28:19).

Earlier chapters presented much evidence that Israelite civilizations were established in the New World by the Hebrew/Phoenicians, Carthaginians, and Iberians. These Israelites, by bringing Old World knowledge and customs to the New World, had a large role in the founding of New World civilizations. For example, the Carthaginians who colonized the New World were Israelites who practiced human sacrifice as part of their Baal worship. The fact that ancient New World cultures practiced human sacrifice indicates this grisly practice was planted in the New World by the Carthaginians. Since Carthaginians were also North Africans (familiar with Egypt's pyramids), it is also likely that the presence of pyramids in the Meso American civilizations of the New World attests to linkages between the two regions.

There is no doubt that the means for Jesus Christ to travel to the New World did exist. Phoenician and Carthaginian vessels crossed the Atlantic thorough the first millennium B.C., and Roman vessels also learned the routes in later centuries.

Records exist that the Romans had ocean-going vessels as large as -1600 tons displacement, and that such vessels could be 180 feet in length, have a beam of 45 feet and a cargo hold 44 feet deep. Josephus records that he rode in a Roman passenger ship carrying 600 people, and Acts 27:9-36 records that Paul rode in a Roman vessel carrying 276 people in a dangerous sailing season (when a reduced passenger total was likely). Roman artifacts have also been found in the New World. Boland comments on Roman artifacts found on the American east coast. In *Saga America*, Dr. Fell documents that Roman coins, artifacts and inscriptions have been found in the American states of Alabama, Tennessee, New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Connecticut, Georgia, and others. DrYell's comments on Judah coins (second century A.D.) being found in Kentucky, and the Missouri-Arkansas border region confirm that sailing routes from Judea to ancient North America were known in the early Christian era. DrYell also wrote concerning a Hebrew inscription found in Tennessee:

..the Bat Creek stone from Tennessee, supposed by the Smithsonian finders to be Cherokee, but recognized by all Hebrew scholars who have studied it as a Hebrew text of the first century .A.D. Dr. Robert Stieglitz of New York reads it as "A comet for the Hebrews," with reference to Halley's comet, which 'hung over Jerusalem like a flaming sword' in the year 69 A.D. during the first revolt ... The evidence suggests that Kentucky and Tennessee became havens of refuge for persecuted Hebrews ... (Emphasis added.)

The above piece of evidence places Judeans travelling to ancient North America in the first century A.D. (Just decades after Jesus Christ's lifetime). From this evidence, it can be seen that transatlantic routes existed during the lifetime of Jesus Christ. Since Joseph of Arimathea was involved in an international trading firm which necessitated long oceanic voyages, Jesus would have ready access to sailing routes to North America. If Joseph was also a Roman official (a "decurio"), he would have had privileged access to Rome's knowledge of routes to North America.

There is an episode in the Bible, which indicates that Jesus was physically adapted to the effects of long ocean voyages. Mark 4:35-41 describes an event in which Jesus and his disciples were crossing the Sea of Galilee and were caught in a storm. Verse 37 states: "there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full." Afraid for their lives, the disciples found Jesus "in hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow." After being force awakened by the disciples, Jesus commanded the wind to "be still and an immediate calm prevailed. Apparently Jesus was sleeping lower deck. Hebrews 4:15 tells us that Jesus was a human being as well as the Son of God, and that he "was in

all points tempted like we are." If Jesus experienced all the sensations which humans experience, his human body was subject to seasickness and nausea. Jesus was able to sleep on a ship that was rolling and pitching severe storm indicates that his human body had previously been adapted to the buffeting of waves and the movements of sea swells. His involvement with Joseph of Arimathea's international travel business would have given him ample time to get his "sea legs." While the context of this account shows that this storm was the most severe experienced by these fishermen on an inland lake, it was likely less severe than the storms and sea swells experienced by Jesus on open ocean (enabling him to sleep through a storm on an inland lake).

Another biblical account also supports the concept that Jesus was outside of Palestine during the "hidden years." In John 10:16, Jesus had a discourse with the Jews in which he said:

***'And other sheep I have which are not of this fold them also must I bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. '***

In Matthew 10:6 and 15:24, Jesus referred to the "lost sheep of the House of Israel (the ten tribes of Israel). In Mark 6:34, regarded the multitudes who followed him as "sheep," and most of those multitudes would have been of Judea. Since sheep dwell in "folds," what was meant by Jesus' imagery of John 10: 16 that He had "sheep" in more than one "fold?" Jesus refers to Judea as "this fold," but informs them that they are not the only "fold." Clearly, the other "fold" was where the descendants of the tribes of Israel lived. Since Jesus told them "Other sheep I have, [in other folds]," his use of the present tense indicates that it was already an accomplished fact: he already had "sheep" (followers) in a fold other than Judea. Since there is no evidence of Jesus being in Judea, from ages 12 to 30, he had plenty of time to visit and preach to the descendants of the ten tribes of Israel during those eighteen years

The Gospel books of the Bible (Matthew-John) are eyewitness accounts of Jesus' ministry to the House of Judah, which lasted 3 1/2 years. None of his ministry to the House of Israel is recorded in the Bible even though the Bible implies it had occurred prior to Jesus' ministry in Judea. The life of Jesus, as presented in the Bible is like a book in which only the first and the last few chapters are included, with all the middle chapters (the majority of the book) left out!

The Apostle John wrote that the Gospel accounts did not provide a comprehensive account of the life of Christ. John 21:25 states:

***"there were also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. "***

John's assertion that the life of Jesus was extraordinarily active and eventful is significant in light of the fact that the Bible says nothing about his life from age 12 to age 30. It is logical that many of Jesus' undescribed activities spoken of by John 21:25 were not done in Judea, or they would have been discussed in the "eyewitness" gospels. Many of Jesus' unwritten exploits must have been performed outside of Judea, and this is consistent with legends that Jesus traveled to many parts of the ancient world.

There are reasons to believe that the response of the ten tribes of Israel to Jesus was favorable. Since some of Parthia's ruling class worshipped Jesus when he was a child, they likely welcomed him eagerly in Parthia's Asian empire when he was a young man. The positive legends about the first Quetzalcoatl (which parallel many biblical facts about Jesus' life) indicate that he made a lasting, favorable impression in the New World. The Druids of the British Isles and Northwest Europe had long expected a savior named Yesu (Yeshuah), and the legends of early Briton record a warm response to Joseph of Arimathea and other early Christians. It seems apparent why Jesus told the Jews he had "sheep" in other "folds."

The New Testament records that Jesus was well-received by the common people of the House of Judah. (Indeed, who could respond negatively to one who miraculously healed so many people?) It was the Jewish hierarchy which reacted negatively to Jesus. The reason is simple. The nations of the ten tribes of Israel were sovereign nations at the time Jesus visited them. Therefore, they didn't resent that Jesus'

mission did not include physical "salvation" from oppressors. They didn't need any! In sharp contrast, the House of Judah (the portion that lived in Judea) was hungry for physical "salvation" from Roman oppression. Their rulers had little interest in a message of spiritual salvation; they wanted a Messiah bringing physical salvation from Rome!

As Jesus approached age thirty, he said good-bye both to his great-uncle's international mining and trading business, to his "sheep" living in the "folds" of the ten tribes of Israel, and returned to his native land of Judea. The satisfying years of international responsibility and warm welcomes among many diverse and distant people were over. The difficult years of his earthly mission were ahead of him, and he knew it.

The New Testament teaches that if Jesus Christ had failed his mission (to atone for mankind's sins) God the Father (the "I High God" of the Old Testament), would not have permitted a single human being to ever taste eternal life since mankind would have no atoning sacrifice. If Jesus failed, all mankind died with him. The young Hebrew man, with the royal blood of King David in his veins and filled with the Holy Spirit of his Father (the "Most High God") must have had a tremendous load on his mind as he made what was to be his last trip home. He must have felt like he was "carrying the world on his shoulders" as he returned to Judea, for so he was.

### **CAESAR AUGUSTA DIES; TIBERIUS REIGNS**

## **JOHN THE BAPTIST INTRODUCES CHRIST**

### **HIS APPEARANCE**

***MAT 3:1 In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea,  
2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.  
3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.  
4 And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.  
5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region round about Jordan,  
6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.***

***MAR 1:2 As it is written in the prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.  
3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.  
4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins.  
5 And there went out unto him all the land of Judaea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.  
6 And John was clothed with camel's hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins; and he did eat locusts and wild honey;***

***LUK 3:1 Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judaea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Ituraea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene,  
2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of***

*Zacharias in the wilderness.*

*3 And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins;*

*4 As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.*

*5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth;*

*6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.*

*JOH 1:6 There was a man sent from God, whose name was John.*

*7 The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through him might believe.*

*8 He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light.*

*9 That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.*

*10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.*

*11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.*

*12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*

*13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.*

*14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.*

*15 John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me: for he was before me.*

*16 And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.*

*17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.*

*18 No man hath seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.*

John the Baptist was the miracle child of Elizabeth and her husband the priest Zacharias. John was conceived 6 months before Christ. This means that John the Baptist and Jesus Christ are 30 years old with John being 6 months older.

There is much speculation as to where John was raised and trained. Of course, he was raised in a strict Hebrew home of a priest. He would be a Levite. Jesus would be from the tribe of Judah. John's dress and appearance may speak to his rearing in the colonies of the essences in the dessert. They were the keepers of the scrolls of the Old Testament.

I believe that Jesus and John would have known each other as children and may have discussed their rolls in life.

At any rate, John knew that he was the forerunner of Jesus Christ and was to preach and prepare the hearts of the people to receive the Messiah.

### **HIS MESSAGE**

*MAT 3:7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said*

*unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?*

*8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:*

*9 And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.*

*10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.*

*11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:*

*12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire. ~The Baptism of Jesus*

*13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.*

*14 But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?*

*His message was straightforward and demanded repentance and obedience as well as compassion. There are several points I want to make about this message as recorded:*

He wanted to see fruit of repentance. That fruit would have manifest itself in sorrow for sin and well as a tender compassionate heart, and contrite spirit.

John baptized those who made such confession and repentance. Baptism was called *ōwashingō*.

The Old Covenant rituals had many washings for many things. Repentance was one. It symbolized the removal of guilt and sin.

John did not accept everyone who came forward to ask for baptism. There was a special class of people in specific that he rejected. The Pharisees and Sadducees were such people. There is a real question as to why he rejected these men. They had no repentance and/or meat or evidence of repentance. Why was this?

This question will separate the understanding from the unenlightened. The normal response by preachers and Christians is that they could have repented and that they should have and they would have been baptized. This position leaves the responsibility of repentance upon the individual. This response eliminates the necessity of the Power of God in the Holy Spirit to bring about this repentance. This belief puts repentance on the human level as something that is achieved by human effort and therefore attainable by everyone. But this is not true.

The fact that John called these men *ōgeneration of vipersō* is significant. The term *ōgenerationō* come from the Greek word,

*gennema* {ghen'-nay-mah}

from 1080

(1) that which has been born or begotten

(1.a) the offspring or progeny of men or animals

(1.b) the fruits of the earth, the produce of agriculture

KJV: fruit 5, generation 4

In other-words, John was saying, *ōyou who have been born of vipers, whose father is a viper, you who are descendants of vipersō*. These individuals were the descendants of some heritage that was known as the seed of the viper or serpent.

This is not the only place this comment is made. The first place we see the term *ōserpentō* is in Genesis 3:1. We all know that story.

In Mat 12, we see that the Pharisees are attacking Jesus and accusing Him of being powered by Satan. He comes back in verse 34 and calls them ***MAT 12:34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things?*** Jesus also said they were descendants of a serpent or viper race.

Again, Jesus is confronted with these people and He again identifies them. ***MAT 23:33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?***

Jesus again met these people as recorded in John 8 where He made it very clear that these people were not Adamic people of Hebrew origin with Spirit capacity and there fore had no place for Him, His Word or His Spirit. Therefore, they cannot and could not be brought to repentance, redemption or salvation.

Jesus and John the Baptist knew who these people were, but our people today do not know who these people are. John knew that repentance was not a product of the human mind, but was only possible by those who had an inner temple for the Spirit of God and His work alone to bring repentance. Those who have no place for spiritual repentance are natural haters of Christ, the Word, the church and God's People. Christ and John both knew that they would reject Christ, because they had no spirit capacity for God.

## **HIS INTRODUCTION OF CHRIST**

***MAT 3:11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:***

***12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.***

***MAR 1:7 And preached, saying, There cometh one mightier than I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.***

***8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.***

***LUK 3:15 And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not;***

***16 John answered, saying unto them all, I indeed baptize you with water; but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:***

***17 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.***

***18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.***

***JOH 1:19 And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou?***

***20 And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ.***

***21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No.***

***22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?***

***23 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of***

*the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.*

*24 And they which were sent were of the Pharisees.*

*25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet?*

*26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not;*

*27 He it is, who coming after me is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose.*

*28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.*

Christ was introduced as the “*Lamb of God*” and as the “*one who would baptize with the Spirit.*” These two thoughts are central to the redemption of Adam/Israel. Adam/Israel needed a blood sacrifice that takes away the breach between them and their Covenant God. They needed to be baptized (indwelt and filled) by the Spirit that once possessed Adam in the Garden. Paul knew the bottom line of the law and the covenants. He covers it in Romans 8. Turn there to read this important message.

It was necessary for John the Baptist to introduce Christ as the one who could meet both of those needs to redeem Israel. This also confirms the previous statements as to why Christ came in the first place.

## **BAPTISM OF JESUS**

*MAT 3:13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. 14 But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?*

*15 And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.*

*16 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:*

*17 And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.*

*MAR 1:9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.*

*10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him:*

*11 And there came a voice from heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.*

*LUK 3:21 Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened,*

*22 And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased.*



Why was Jesus baptized? As long as man has the wrong reason for himself being baptized, he will never understand why Jesus Christ was baptized. Baptism or washing was a symbol of consecration, setting apart and dedication.

Jesus Christ was baptized for only one reason. The Law required it to be a priest or High priest. It was a symbol of the beginning of Christ's entrance into His priestly work which would culminate here on earth with His death as the atoning sacrifice and His deliverance of that blood to the Holy of Holies in the heavenly temple.

The reason we are baptized today is because it is our open public declaration that we are now entering the Church of Jesus Christ for the work of the ministry.

John the Baptist had the authority to baptize Jesus because John's father was a Levite, practicing baptism and John was a Levite who doubtless had been baptized at age 30 when he entered his ministry as a Levite.

**(Continued next Month)**

### **JOHN DECLARES JESUS TO BE THE CHRIST/MESSIAH**

*JOH 1:29 The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.*

*30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is preferred before me: for he was before me.*

*31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.*

*32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him.*

*33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost.*

*34 And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.*

John knew that the water baptism was not the promise of the prophets. The indwelling and filling of the Adamite with the Spirit of God and the Lamb sacrifice for redemption was the fulfillment of the prophets.

### **CHRIST TEMPTED IN THE WILDERNESS**

*MAT 4:1 Then was Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.*

*2 And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred.*

*3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.*

*4 But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.*

*5 Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple,*

*6 And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.*

*7 Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.*

*8 Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them;*

*9 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.*

*10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.*

*11 Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.*

*MAR 1:12 And immediately the spirit driveth him into the wilderness.*

*13 And he was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered unto him.*

*LUK 4:1 And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness,*

*2 Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.*

*3 And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.*

*4 And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.*

*5 And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.*

*6 And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.*

*7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.*

*8 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.*

*9 And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence:*

*10 For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee:*

*11 And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.*

*12 And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.*

*13 And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.*

The three temptations speak to the three vanities of EVE.

Food

Recognition  
Authority

Many people make a big deal about the fact that Satan offered Jesus the kingdoms of the world. They use this as proof that Satan has temporary control of the world. This is far out of line. First of all, this world is not Satan's, it is God's

***PSA 24:1 The earth is the LORD'S, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.***

Second, The accuser is also the notorious liar.

As Christ had been baptized and was now getting ready to go out with His message, He was being forced to examine all the reasons and methods where by He could attain victory with out the cross. This is our problem today

He could have had the world follow Him for free food. He could have performed miracles and caused the people to awe. He could have bowed to the wishes of the Serpent elite and rule the world physically then He could have had the power of the Roman Empire at His disposal.

But He knew that His only way to deliver His Adamite/Hebrew people was to die for their sins and live within them re-birthing them spiritually and giving them eternal life with new bodies. e way up is down.

The wicked of the world, like, Gandhi, Martin Luther King and Mandela keep winning with an aura of self sacrifice while we continue to rally the troops and forces to fight to the finish, not realizing that we are defeating ourselves.

## **AFTER THE TEMPTATION STARTING HIS MINISTRY**

Jesus Christ is about to start His ministry, baptized as a priest/king. He has returned from his 18 years of world travel. This travel was with his Uncle Joseph of Arimathaea, taking the gospel to the dispersed tribes of Israel in Europe, primarily England.

He has been baptized and tested in the wilderness.

How long will this ministry be and what is the purpose? This has already been predicted and foretold by the prophet Daniel.

***DAN 9:26 And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the***

*end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.*

***27 And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.***

While these verses seem difficult to some and interpreted many ways, I see these verses saying that Christ would come, start His ministry of confirming the covenant with those who still qualify in the old covenant. He would do this for a week (a prophetic week is 7 years), but He would be cut off (crucified) in the midst of the week (after the first 3 ½ years), in the middle of the week.

This is exactly what happened. Christ was baptized and started His ministry at age 30. He was crucified about 3 ½ years later.

Jesus Christ was the sacrifice, therefore, after He was crucified, there was no need for further animal sacrifices. However, the rebellious Edomites in power in Jerusalem and the temple did not want a spiritual kingdom, they wanted an earthly kingdom with them being delivered from the Romans and established in power. They continued to sacrifice animals and further anger God. God sent the Roman General Titus and his armies to close down the sacrifice by burning the city and the temple. This was the tribulation predicted in the Gospels.

Christ came at the appointed time. Daniel was told that there were 70 (7s) or 490 years left from his time until Messiah.

***DAN 9:24 Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.***

Christ came and was baptized after 69 week or 483 years. Christ ministered for 3 ½ years and was killed as the sacrifice. Under Nero, the antichrist, Titus waged war against Jerusalem as promised by Christ on the Mount to the disciples. This war is recorded in the works of Josephus and lasted for 3 ½ years. This was the tribulation and the end of the age for the old covenant. As Christ promised, not one Christian died in that siege.

As for the purpose of this 3 ½ years ministry, Daniel also foretells this. First, Christ was to confirm the covenant with man. Now to confirm something, there must be a people who are living for the expectation of this covenant to benefit them. The Israelites who lived in Palestine who were qualified and those who were dispersed all over the world would fit such a need. But they had been cut off from that covenant and they had to be reconciliation. Daniel said that this Messiah would also make reconciliation. Ephesians is the recorded fulfillment of this accomplishment.

***EPH 2:14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us;***

***15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in***

*ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace;  
16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby:*

Christ had three and one half years to confirm His Messiahship, prepare the believers for the coming New Covenant, prepare leaders to shepherd the sheep and evangelize the world of Adamite/Israelites. Once all was in place, the end of the age (the old covenant age) would cease by violence and desolation in the destruction of the Old Covenant icons of temple and Jerusalem. From this time on, believing Adam/Israel would be the new Jerusalem, the church, the Bride.

Our study now turns to this 3 ½ years in the ministry life of Christ.

## **THE FIRST THREE DISCIPLES**

*JOH 1:35 Again the next day after John stood, and two of his disciples;  
36 And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God!  
37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.  
38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master,) where dwellest thou?  
39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour.  
40 One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother.  
41 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messiah, which is, being interpreted, the Christ.  
42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, A stone.*

The selection of the disciples is also a fulfillment of the prophets about Benjamin. The reason that God left the Tribe of Benjamin with Judah and the Levites is because of the necessity of these tribes to carry out at an appointed time the spreading of the gospel. It is no accident that all of the Apostles except Judas and Matthew were Benjamites, Paul was also a Benjamite. It was predicted in the prophets that the Tribe of Benjamin would be the light bearer.

## **8. PHILIP AND NATHANAEL**

*JOH 1:43 The day following Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me.  
44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.  
45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.  
46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.  
47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile!*

*48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee.*

*49 Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel.*

*50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.*

*51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.*

Jesus again picks Benjamites for Apostles and disciples. These men were not theologians, nor pastors or priests. Men of God who are trail-blazers and society-changing men of thought and practice are not always ösweet menö. They are not brainwashed in or necessarily sympathetic to current politically correct theology. Every Apostle would be martyred for his faith except John. They tried to kill him but God protected him so that he could write the Revelation.

## **9. TURNING THE WATER INTO WINE**

*JOH 2:1 And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there:*

*2 And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.*

*3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.*

*4 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.*

*5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.*

*6 And there were set there six waterpots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.*

*7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.*

*8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare it.*

*9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was: (but the servants which drew the water knew;) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom,*

*10 And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now.*

*11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on him.*

Remember that Jesus is functioning within His priestly calling to öconfirm the covenant for one weekö and become the sacrifice to “put away sinö and “redeem His people”. He did not go to the marriage for recreation or public relations. He was there to perform a miracle, a specific miracle with a message. It is very unfortunate that this passage has become a focal point for debates on the Biblical correctness of drinking alcoholic beverages. This wine was not even close to the alcohol content of current day beer or wine. All current day alcoholic beverages would qualify as Biblical “strong drink”. End of discussion.

First of all, Christ had to defend monogamy and resist divorce over and over in the lax Roman culture. This was just another good way to do that.

The miracle however, was the turning of water to wine. Wine and the Holy Spirit show up in several passages in the Scripture. Wine is descriptive of wrath, pleasure and other things. But the most clear use of wine as described by Jesus was the new birth. He stated in

***MAR 2:22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles: else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.***

The new bottles in this passage represented His people filled with the Spirit and under the New Covenant..

The Old bottles represented the Old covenant under those who rejected Him and the New Covenant.

The pots at the wedding were made of stone. I believe that they represented the Israelites. Consider these verses

***2CO 3:3 Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.***

***EZE 11:19 And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh:***

***EZE 36:26 A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.***

***MAT 13:5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:  
Also, Israel is known in Scripture as the "Stone Kingdom."***

I believe that this miracle was a statement of the purpose of His mission. He had come to make it possible for the Spirit of God to enter the hearts of His people and give them a heart, not of stone and rebellion, but of softness, tender obedience and love for God.

The new birth is a miraculous work of God in the heart of His people. When they are born again, they have a heart of love toward God and do not need to be begged, beaten and driven to obey Him and serve Him. Most modern day Christians still have hearts of stone. They have not had a "New Birth" by the Spirit of God. They have only made a mental and verbal commitment to the Lord, which is changeable.

## **Jesus SOJOURNS IN CAPERNAUM**

***JOH 2:12 After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: and they continued there not many days.***

Jesus did have a mother, brothers and sisters. No mention of an earthly father here. Most believe Joseph had already passed on.

## **EARLEY JUDEAN MINISTRY**

## 1. TEMPLE CLEANSING, JESUS' FIRST PASSOVER.

*JOH 2:13 And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.*

*14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting:*

*15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables;*

*16 And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence; make not my Father's house an house of merchandise.*

*17 And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.*

Notice that the book says "The Jew's Passover". Remember that the return from Babylon to Jerusalem was not a return of all Israel. Most of Israel including the Tribes of Judah had already been dispersed and scattered. Most of them had migrated to other parts of the world growing and multiplying into many nations. Even Daniel and his friends did not migrate back to Jerusalem.

The return to Jerusalem was of a part of the Tribe of Judah, Benjamin and Levi. The covenant God made with David for the messiah to be of His seed and inherit his throne had to be fulfilled. Also, the confirming of the covenant with "many", not all, had to be fulfilled.

There were only 40,000 of the lineage of Israel that returned. Many of them had been spiritually weakened by the culture of Babylon. There were many mixed people of the Edomites and other cultures that returned also. The true Hebrew faith of Israel had been subverted into a paganized Canaanite mixture called Judaism. It was a religion run by the Elders who became known as Pharisees and Sadducees. These were the people who hated Christ and crucified Him.

This was their Passover. Yes, it was fashioned after the real thing, but remember that for all practical purposes, God had not only divorced Israel, but also Judah. The rituals were corrupted also. Jesus said

*MAT 23:3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.*

Jesus observed the Old Covenant rituals and law for they were not officially dead. On this occasion, when He went to the temple to observe His first Passover as an adult in ministry, He was infuriated by what He saw. Remember that the Passover required sacrifice of a lamb. Many people traveled for days and weeks to get to the temple for this observance. They could not bring an animal with them.

Therefore, the Jews, the mixed and ungodly seed, seeing an opportunity for riches seized upon the occasion. They provided a lamb for a price, a very good price. People would go to pay for the sacrifice, but because they came from many countries with many currencies, these greedy priests invoked a law that all sacrifices had to be purchased with the coin of Judah, the Shekel. If the traveler had no shekels, then he had to change the money from his currency to the shekel. Just like the bankers today, when you travel over seas, you have to exchange US Dollars for the proper currency if you use currency. Well, my friend, there is a fee for this exchange. Once again the priests saw a chance to rob the people. They hiked the fees.

When Jesus went in and saw this going on, He could not contain Himself. He made a whip and drove them out. It is no accident that He said, "This is my Father's House". He called them



thieves and robbers. The Disciples remembered the Scripture that predicted Christ would be eaten up with the zeal of His Father's House.

### **THE JEWS WANT A SIGN**

*Joh 2:18 Then answered the Jews and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?*

*19 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.*

*20 Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days?*

*21 But he spake of the temple of his body.*

*22 When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.*

*MAT 12:38 Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.*

*39 But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas:*

*40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.*

*41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.*

*42 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here.*

*When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.*

*44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.*

*45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.*

The term *ōsignō* is significant. It means a supernatural Divine occurrence. The need for signs was the trade mark of Canaanite priests who were involved in Baal or Moloch worship. Moses ran into it in Egypt. The priests of the Pharaoh were able to perform magic signs that appeared Divine.

Moses responded with specific miracle events that signified God's sovereignty over the gods of Egypt. The significant thing was that the king and the priests of Egypt could not even believe a sign when they were given one. This was also typical of the Edomite/Canaanite religious leaders in Palestine who saw the miracles of Jesus.

The fact that these leaders looked for signs further confirmed that they were not Israelites who would have believed. Jesus even says so in:

*JOH 5:46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me.*

*JOH 5:47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?*

***JOH 8:46 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?***

***47 He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.***

Jesus then gave them the ultimate sign, His death and resurrection. But, again, they believed not. They could not and did not understand.

## **JESUS AND NICODEMUS DISCUSS THE NEW BIRTH**

***JOH 2:23 Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast day, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did.***

***24 But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men,***

***25 And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.***

***3:1 There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews:***

***2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.***

***3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.***

***4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?***

***5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.***

***6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.***

***7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.***

***8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.***

***9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?***

***10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?***

***11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness.***

***12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things?***

***13 And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.***

***14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up:***

***15 That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.***

***16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. 1***

***7 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.***

***18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.***

**19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**

**20 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.**

**21 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.**

The new birth is and has become the hub of evangelical preaching. The problem is that Armenian theology has changed the Gospel (good news) of it. Which of the following messages do you think would be good news to you?

You have to change yourself. You don't want God and He can't come in to your heart and give you the new birth until you decide to invite Him in, repent of your sin and decide to live right. You can't do this without the Spirit, but the Spirit can't help you until you change.(An impossible situation)

I am the product of Adam my father who sinned and God's spirit vacated. I did not desire God or want to change. But His Spirit came in to my heart and changed my mind. I began to desire to know God. I began to go where I could hear the Word of God and meet with other people who wanted to know God. I did not understand why I had this change in my heart. After I heard the Word, I came under great guilt and shame. I realized I was a sinner. I wept and asked God to forgive me, but He had already forgiven me. I want to please Him. I am greatly distressed by the pull of the world and my flesh. I seek God desperately and read His Word that they might keep me in the path of righteousness. I understand now that I am bound to God by His will and His covenant. He has given me eternal life and He has a purpose for me in this life and the next. I do not fear evil for my God is sovereign and keeps me unto the day of resurrection.(This is good news)

I say with Jesus what He said to Nicodemus,  
***Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?***

I say to the preachers of the land, "Are you preachers of the Gospel and know not the good news?"

This whole conversation was about the story of the Bible, which is about the creation of the Adamite to manage and rule the creation by the power and wisdom of the indwelling ever living God. God in Spirit created Adam with a temple/spirit in which He could dwell. The Garden tragedy of sin caused God the Spirit to vacate the temple within Adam and begin a plan of redemption to bring Adam back to a qualifying point for His indwelling once again. All Adamites born since the fall of Adam our father have been born with a temple/spirit, but without the presence of God in that temple.

When Christ came, he came to die a redemptive death, conquer death and re-enter Adam's temple to dwell. Rom 8:19-22. ***This is called the "new birth"***. Also, we receive this Spirit in ***"earnest"*** or in partial application. Not all Adamites are receiving this new birth in this age. Acts 15 tells us that God is choosing himself a bride, the church, a temple. The individual is a temple and the local church is a body of body of temples that make up a temple and the body of Christ

(all who possess the Spirit are the temple at large, the New Jerusalem. This is the first resurrection. Rev 20:1 . After the second resurrection of the body, every man, (Adamite) shall be given the new birth and the full anointing of the Holy Spirit. But only those chosen and given the new birth, as the Bride shall have joint rule on the throne with Christ.

Nicodemus was familiar with the coming Messiah. He should have been aware of the need for the spiritual re-birth, but wasn't. Christ made it very clear that being an educated man in the law would not take the place of spiritual discernment and power. Without the new birth, there would be no way Adam/Israel could be restored to a place of dominion power.

Jesus made it clear that the New Birth is God given not man chosen. He referred to the wind. Man cannot see it. You cannot invite the wind and expect it to respond. You cannot control where the wind goes. The same is true with the Spirit of God. You cannot invite the Spirit and expect Him to obey you. You cannot order the Spirit to go and give new birth to a loved one. God chooses His people and sends His spirit without the knowledge will or desire of the individual for His Spirit to come. God's Spirit enters that Adamite's temple area and brings new life. With this new life comes a hunger and thirst for knowledge. With knowledge comes identification of sin and then comes shame and repentance. These are all gifts of the Spirit. Faith and repentance are gifts of the Spirit just as much as all the other 12 to 14 gifts mentioned in 1 Corinthians.

Those individuals who have hated the covenant of their fathers and allowed themselves to inter- racially bring children into the world who have no temple or a mixed or cursed temple, have assured that their posterity shall not have part in the Bride and probably the kingdom itself. It is not popular, but the covenants of God are racially applicable.

This does not mean that God has no covenant with non-Adamite people. But it is not the same covenant as He has with Adam/Israel. The Bible deals with Adam/Israel, therefore, we are not given the details of any covenants that God may have with others. Since God's covenants with Adam/Israel are for dominion, we would have to assume that any covenants made with others would be in a subjective role.

### **3. CHRIST BAPTIZING**

*JOH 3:22 After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judaea; and there he tarried with them, and baptized.*

*23 And John also was baptizing in Aenon near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.*

*24 For John was not yet cast into prison.*

### **4. JOHN'S TESTAMONY ABOUT CHRIST AT AENON**

*JOH 3:25 Then there arose a question between some of John's disciples and the Jews about purifying.*

*26 And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.*

*27 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven.*

*28 Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.*

*29 He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which*

*standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.*

*30 He must increase, but I must decrease.*

*31 He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven is above all.*

*32 And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth; and no man receiveth his testimony.*

*33 He that hath received his testimony hath set to his seal that God is true.*

*34 For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.*

*35 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand.*

*36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.*

## **5. IMPRISONMENT OF JOHN THE BAPTIST**

*LUK 3:19 But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,*

*20 Added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.*

Prison. So often throughout the Bible we see where those who are ruling put God's people into prison. Either the rulers themselves are enraged or there are people of evil intent who are enraged and they incite those in power.

Ungodly rulers do not hesitate to use their power unjustly to stop opposition to them and their evil ways. This Herod is the son of Herod the Great who killed all the babies. He is the son whom Joseph avoided on his return from Egypt with the Christ child. This Herod had killed his brother in order to have his brother's wife. He is Edomite and very bloody.

Because John the Baptist dared to publicly reveal Herod's sin, Herod had him jailed. Was there a trial, probably. But it was a trial like so many in America today where the government gets its way.

## **6. JESUS MOVES ON TO GALLILEE TO AVOID EARLY DEATH**

*MAT 4:12 Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee;*

*JOH 4:1 When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, 2 (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,) 3 He left Judaea, and departed again into Galilee.*

Jesus left the area of John's arrest and went to Galilee. Here is a good example of why WWJD is not appropriate. Jesus did not leave to avoid arrest or death because He thought it best to always avoid confrontation. He left because He could not risk being killed early. Don't take this example and try to apply it to someone under attack for their faith or ministry today.

When we were having our struggle in Nebraska over the Christian School, many sheepish ministers said to me that we should just leave Nebraska and have a school where it was legal. We should avoid the conflict and embarrassment to the State.

Wrong! The families who lived and worked in Nebraska could not move to a State that allowed home school or church school. We had an obligation to obey God in the training of the children and opposing the sinful practices of the State.

## **7. WOMAN AT THE WELL**

*JOH 4:4 And he must needs go through Samaria.*

*5 Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave*

to his son Joseph.

6 Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour.

7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. 8 (For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.)

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.

11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle?

13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband:

18 For thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly.

19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father.

22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews.

23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

24 God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things.

26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am he.

## 8 GOSPEL IN SAMARIA, SYCAR

John 4:27 And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men,

29 Come, see a man, which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

31 In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

32 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eat?

34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.

35 Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest.

36 And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together.

37 And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours.

39 And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did.

*40 So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two days.*

*41 And many more believed because of his own word;*

*42 And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.*

The story of Jesus preaching to the woman from Samaria has been used extensively by preachers and those who promote inter-racial churches and marriages as proof that Jesus opened the Gospel to non-Israelite people.

They base this belief on their erroneous data. They believe that all inhabitants in Samaria were non-Israelite or mixed blood. They base this on 2 Kings 17-18. The King James version also reveals that the Jews called them Gentiles. But these people were Israelites.

This woman also called Jesus a Jew, only because he was from the Tribe of Judah. Samaritans were sometimes called Jews.

But the same passages state that the Israelites were replaced by foreigners and strangers in their cities mainly and primarily. There were many poor and lowly Israelites that remained in the rural areas and in the small villages.

The woman at the well makes it abundantly clear that she was an Israelite. In verse twelve, she says Jesus is He was greater than our father Jacob?

She could not claim Jacob as father if she were not an Israelite.

It was at the noon hour when harlots and outcasts came to the well for water. They were not allowed to come when the descent folks were there.

The Apostles were sent to town to get food (meat). The woman comes to draw water while they were gone.

The conversation between Jesus and the woman was a conversation about well water that Jesus turned to Spiritual water and how the woman could have it if she met certain criteria.

Jesus confronted her about her sin. This is very important. Preachers today fail miserably in this area. There is little or no preaching on the sins of the people confronted by the laws of God. This woman had to admit that she had 5 husbands. She was an adulteress, She had to repent.

When she realized that Jesus was the Messiah savior, she did repent and then went to invite others. The forgiveness was a life changing event.

But, for preachers to teach that Jesus loves everyone, just as they are and that there can be forgiveness without repentance, is blasphemy against the Word of God.

The great sore spot was that Jeroboam broke away from Judah and made it illegal to return to Jerusalem to worship. He established the center of worship at \_\_\_\_\_. That is why this woman brought up the argument that the Jews said we have to go to Jerusalem, our leaders say we have to go to \_\_\_\_\_. Who is right?

Jesus said from now on, neither is right. God is Spirit and He must be worshiped in spirit and truth, anywhere.

The statement: “Salvation is of the Jews”, is a poor rendering. The Messiah was promised to come out of the Tribe of Judah. God would never want us to believe that the Jews are the source of salvation.

## **F. GALILEAN MINISTRY**

### **1. EARLY DAYS**

#### **a. Jesus Arrives in Galilee**



*MAT 4:17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.*

*MAR 1:14 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God,*

*15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.*

*LUK 4:14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.*

*15 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.*

*JOH 4:43 Now after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee.*

*44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country.*

*45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galilaeans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.*

The message was not to repent and be saved for heaven in the sky. The message was repent for the kingdom was at hand. The kingdom is an earthly term. Kingdom work was soon to be done in and through the local church. Baptism then became an entrance into that ministry of working in and for the kingdom.

Jesus did not get a welcome in His own town. Home town preachers rarely do well in their home town. Local people are not willing to humble themselves and believe that God would raise one from among them to leadership. It somehow seems to reflect on the local's unwillingness to be used, even if it is not true.

#### **b. Healing of the Nobleman's Son**

*JOH 4:46 So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum.*

*47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judaea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death.*

*48 Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe.*

*49 The nobleman saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die.*

*50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.*

*51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying, Thy son liveth.*

*52 Then enquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.*

*53 So the father knew that it was at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself believed, and his whole house.*

*This is again the second miracle that Jesus did, when he was come out of Judaea into Galilee.*

*Galilee is North of Jerusalem. It is the home of the Tribe of Benjamin. The Jews hated the Benjamites and would not allow them to reside in the Jerusalem area. They came to*

*Jerusalem for feasts and holy days and for trade.*

*Jesus was born in Bethlehem, but was raised near the Galileans. It was in among them that he ministered, did most of His miracles and called most of His Apostles. It was on or near the lake that He preached many of His sermons.*

*The Nobleman was an Israelite.*

### **c. First Rejection at Nazareth**

*LUK 4:16 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read.*

*17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,*

*18 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,*

*19 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. Isa 61:*

*20 And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.*

*21 And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.*

*22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son?*

*23 And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country.*

*24 And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country.*

*25 But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land;*

*26 But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.*

*27 And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.*

*28 And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,*

*29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong.*

*30 But he passing through the midst of them went his way,*

This is the time and place that the local people of the town where he spent his first 12 years could not recall exactly who he is.

Also, Jesus declared that He was the fulfillment of the prophecy of the Messiah. Exactly from where did he read?

*ISA 61:1 The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; 2 To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn;*

***People who refuse to bow to the Lordship of Jesus Christ cannot expect to see and have miracles performed on their behalf.***

The acceptable day, year, time of the Lord.

***ISA 49:8 Thus saith the LORD, In an acceptable time have I heard thee, and in a day of salvation have I helped thee: and I will preserve thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages;***

***2CO 6:2 (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.)***

Jesus was the person and the day of salvation to the Lord.

Jesus used the illustration of the widow in Isaiah's day and the ten lepers healed. There were many other widows and lepers who were not healed because of their unbelief. Nazareth had a need but they were going to be left out because of their unbelief. This angered the people and they pulled Jesus out of the synagogue and tried to throw Him off the cliff. He miraculously walked through them and they missed the miracle.

It is a truth that those who believe in God see miracles every day.

We are not to see miracles so we may believe, but we are to believe so we may see the miracles.

#### **d. Removal to Capernaum**

***MAT 4:13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim:***

***14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,***

***15 The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles;***

***16 The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up.***

Isa 9:1-2 is the reference here. Galilee of the Gentiles.

The disciples were from there. Jesus was raised there. So we can say that the dispersed Israelites were of the gentiles.

#### **Note On Gentiles.**

In the New testament, there are three Greek words translated Gentile.

Ethnos, 93 times gentiles

37 times nations

27 times nation

5 time heathen

2 times people

Hellen 13 times Greeks

7 times Greek

5 times Gentiles

2 times Gentile

Ethnikos 1 time Manner of gentiles

Ethnos and Ethnoks both define ðRaceö. They define the Adamic race, more specifically the Noah descendants race. Even the Greeks were part of that race. Yes, they were white. If they were outside of the corrupted House of Judah, the Judahites referred to them as nations, from Genesis Chapter 10; outside the covenant.

Jesus used the parable of the Rich man and Lazarus to show that the disperse Israelites, now called Gentiles, were at the Gates of the people of Jerusalem.

Modern day universalists have brainwashed everyone into believing that ðgentilesö includes all races. The Bible was never about all races. The non-white races are not included in the list of nations in Genesis Chapter 10.

When the Northern Ten-Tribed Israel was carried away by Assyria and dispersed among those other nations, they became assimilated in and among nations, not all races. This was and is God's plan to redeem all of Noah's descendants that remained true to their race and their God.

So, it is no surprise that early Bible writers referred to these people as the ðgentilesö, the ðnationsö, the ðraceö.

Nations is blood line, country is a political entity

The United States is a political entity originally founded by the white European nations of Anglo-Saxon, Scandinavian, Celtic Germanic peoples.

Zebulon and Naphtali were Israelites called Gentiles.

## **FIRST CIRCUIT**

### **a. Call of Four Fisherman... Draught of Fishes**

*MAT 4:18 And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.*

*19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.*

*20 And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.*

*21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them.*

*22 And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.*

*MAR 1:16 Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.*

*17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.*

*18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.*

*19 And when he had gone a little farther thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.*

*20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.*

***LUK 5:1 And it came to pass, that, as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret,***

***2 And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.***

***3 And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship.***

***4 Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.***

***5 And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.***

***6 And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake.***

***7 And they beckoned unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.***

***8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.***

***9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken:***

***10 And so was also James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men.***

***11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him.***

Jesus chose fishermen. I do not believe that being a fisherman was first priority. I believe that it was an asset. The miracle was used to reveal to the fishermen that Jesus Christ was indeed the Messiah.

Using fishermen and fishing for God's People was prophesied in Jer:

***JER 16:14 Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that it shall no more be said, The LORD liveth, that brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; 15 But, The LORD liveth, that brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north, and from all the lands whither he had driven them: and I will bring them again into their land that I gave unto their fathers. 16 Behold, I will send for many fishers, saith the LORD, and they shall fish them; and after will I send for many hunters, and they shall hunt them from every mountain, and from every hill, and out of the holes of the rocks. 17 For mine eyes are upon all their ways: they are not hid from my face, neither is their iniquity hid from mine eyes. 18 And first I will recompense their iniquity and their sin double; because they have defiled my land, they have filled mine inheritance with the carcasses of their detestable and abominable things.***

Israel was to be regathered from all areas of the earth to assemble primarily in the North & West. \_\_\_\_ That is where they are; in Europe and North America today. The gathering of Israel into these countries was to be a larger exodus than the gathering out of Egypt and crossing the Red Sea.

God said that he would send fishers to fish them. The fishers were the preachers and spiritual leaders. Then he would send hunters to hunt them in every mountain and hill. These would be

archeologists digging for fossils and remains in the rocks and holes of the world to find their earlier existence. Raymond Capt was just such a hunter.

## **b. Teaching in Capernaum Synagogue**

*MAR 1:21 And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught. 22 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.*

*LUK 4:31 And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath days. 32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his word was with power.*

Do we not have scribe preachers today, no authority or power? Authority comes from an anointed call, anointing power for the job, knowledge, experience, and a personal relationship with God. Not many preachers have that today.

## **c. Healing man with unclean spirit**

*MAR 1:23 And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out, 24 Saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God. 25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. 26 And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him. 27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him. 28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.*

*LUK 4:33 And in the synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice, 34 Saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God. 35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him, and hurt him not. 36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, What a word is this! for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out. 37 And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.*

This is a miracle to prove the deity of Christ over the world of evil spirits and the kingdom of darkness.

As a nation and society grows further and further from God, it becomes more open to satanic and evil spirits. God referred to this corrupted House of Judah as such a place just before He allowed Assyria and Babylon to invade them, destroy them and enslave them. \_\_\_\_\_

When the Jews returned from Babylon, many of them were bad figs, evil in spirit and not part of the covenant people. Later the Edomites were brought in and allowed to be equal with God's people. All of this gradually increased the demonic and evil spirits among the people of God in Judea.

When Jesus came, He cast out many devils, evil spirits and He even stated that He had chained

the head Strong man, Satan and ravaged His house and kingdom. Matt 12:29; Mark 3:27; Luk 11:21-22; Rev 20: 1-3.

***MAT 12:29 Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.***

***MAR 3:27 No man can enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house.***

This demon activity was bound for many centuries after Christ. But as prophesied in Rev 20:

***REV 20:1 And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. 2 And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,***

A rise of demon possession results in weird acts and mental sickness

***REV 20:7 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison.***

I believe we are living in the day of Satan loosed. The evidence of this is increased Aborticide, sodomy, witchcraft, and adultery.

The coldness of heart toward God and His law is the root cause for the growth of demons, devils, evil spirits and all the wickedness that they bring.

The only cure for this disease is the preaching of the Law/Word of God calling God's people to repentance and obedience.

## **Day of Miracles in Capernaum**

***MAT 8:14 And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever. 15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and ministered unto them. 16 When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick: 17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.***

***MAR 1:29 And forthwith, when they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John. 30 But Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever, and anon they tell him of her. 31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lifted her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered unto them. 32 And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils. 33 And all the city was gathered together at the door. 34 And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils; and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.***

***LUK 4:38 And he arose out of the synagogue, and entered into Simon's house. And Simon's wife's mother was taken with a great fever; and they besought him for her. 39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever; and it left her: and immediately she arose and ministered unto them. 40 Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. 41 And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.***

Much has been made of Peter having a wife. Anti Catholics like to use this to show that Peter was not the first Pope. Priests and Popes in the Catholic Church were to never marry, therefore, they could not have a mother-in-law.

Peter wasn't a Pope, of course, neither was Peter ever in Rome  
But these are side issues.

The early part of Christ's ministry was to establish who he was. The miracles of healing and casting out demons were the proof. Later He gets into doctrine.

Christ does not want the demons to identify Him, he was identifiable by the words of the prophets who said he would come casting out the demons, healing the sick and preaching the good news of the arrival of the Messiah..

### **Tour of Galilee with Four Disciples**

*MAT 4:23 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people. 24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them. 25 And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judaea, and from beyond Jordan.*

*MAR 1:35 And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed. 36 And Simon and they that were with him followed after him. 37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee. 38 And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth. 39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.*

*LUK 4:42 And when it was day, he departed and went into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them. 43 And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent. 44 And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.*

Jesus is doing what he had to do to fulfill the identifying factors by preaching and healing. Again, notice that He is in Galilee. Jesus was not accepted by the mix of Edomite Jews in Jerusalem. They hated Him and sought to kill Him.

*JOH 7:1 After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.*

### **Preaching and cleansing a Leper**

*MAT 8:2 And, behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 3 And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed. 4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.*



**MAR 1:40** *And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 41 And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou clean. 42 And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosy departed from him, and he was cleansed. 43 And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away; 44 And saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. 45 But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.*

**LUK 5:12** *And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, behold a man full of leprosy: who seeing Jesus fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will: be thou clean. And immediately the leprosy departed from him. 14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go, and shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. 15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.*

More healing. However, the Leper was told that he had a lawful obligation to do before he could tell other. He had to go and report to the priest and have the priest declare him clean.

This did two things:

It notified the priest that the Messiah was on the scene. Leprosy was not curable and for it to vanish would be a miracle. The priest to whom the labor would report was probably the same priest who declared him a leper in the first place.

It would impress on the leper that he had obligations to God, especially now that he was cleansed.

Leprosy is a Type of ösinö. Sin is a disease that we cannot cure. Christ cures us of sin by His blood and forgiveness through grace. We now have an obligation to serve and obey Him.

## **Enmity of Scribes and Pharisees**

### **a. The paralytic borne of four, healed**

**MAT 9:1** *And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city. 2 And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee. 3 And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth. 4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts? 5 For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk? 6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house. 7 And he arose, and departed to his house. 8 But when the multitudes saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.*

**MAR 2:1** *And again he entered into Capernaum after some days; and it was noised*

*that he was in the house. 2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no, not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them. 3 And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsy, which was borne of four. 4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for the press, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay. 5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee. 6 But there was certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, 7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only? 8 And immediately when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts? 9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk? 10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (he saith to the sick of the palsy,) 11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house. 12 And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all; insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.*

*LUK 5:17 And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judaea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them. 18 And, behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsy: and they sought means to bring him in, and to lay him before him. 19 And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went upon the housetop, and let him down through the tiling with his couch into the midst before Jesus. 20 And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee. 21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone? 22 But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answering said unto them, What reason ye in your hearts? 23 Whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Rise up and walk? 24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (he said unto the sick of the palsy,) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thine house. 25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God. 26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to day.*

He is still healing, but now he is tying healing to sins and forgiveness. This draws fire from the Pharisees. They know that only God could forgive sin. Jesus told the lame man on purpose that His sins were forgiven. Jesus knew this would bring the Pharisees to a place where they had to choose to believe in Him or to reject and judge Him an imposter, putting His life in danger.

Christ ties forgiving sin and healing together. This is not unusual.

*JAM 5:15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.*

Sin causes much illness.

*ICO 11:30 For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.*

However, sin of the person or the sins of the parents do not always cause sickness and some forms of birth infirmities.

***JOH 9:1 And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth. 2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? 3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.***

Many birth defects are caused by sins of our fathers in adultery adulterating the seed, mixing with other races and genetics. Canaanites have the most mix and the most diseases.

## **b. The Call Of Matthew-The Levite**

***MAT 9:9 And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him. 10 And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples. 11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners? 12 But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. 13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.***

***MAR 2:13 And he went forth again by the sea side; and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them. 14 And as he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alphaeus sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him. 15 And it came to pass, that, as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him. 16 And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners? 17 When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.***

***LUK 5:27 And after these things he went forth, and saw a publican, named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he said unto him, Follow me. 28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him. 29 And Levi made him a great feast in his own house: and there was a great company of publicans and of others that sat down with them. 30 But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners? 31 And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick. 32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.***

Most of the Apostles were Benjamites from Galilee. Judas was an Edomite, Matthew was a Levite. The roll of a Levite was government duty, which included tax collection.

Jesus called Matthew who became a believer. Matthew threw a party for his tax collector friends and invited Jesus. The Pharisees criticized Jesus for socializing with sinners.

Jesus made a very distinct comparison of the Pharisees with the Tax collectors. Jesus saw that the Pharisees saw themselves as righteous and whole, not in need of a Messiah. The tax

collectors, the Publicans knew that generally speaking they were a hated and crooked bunch in need of a savior.

Jesus simply said, "Since you Pharisees are whole and righteous, you do not need me. These tax collectors need me and they are the ones I came to redeem."

Canaanites and Edomites had all that they could get. No place in them for God or His Word John 8:37

This was a stinging indictment.

### **c. The Question of Fasting Answered**

***MAT 9:14 Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not? 15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.***

***MAR 2:18 And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees used to fast: and they come and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not? 19 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. 20 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.***

***LUK 5:33 And they said unto him, Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink? 34 And he said unto them, Can ye make the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? 35 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.***

Fasting was a big part of the Old Covenant. There was a lot of sadness in captivity. Christ came to set the captive free from demons Satan and Israel's captors. The bridegroom was Christ and He was present with them. That was reason to rejoice.

After Christ returned to heaven, His people, including us, have need to fast and pray on a regular basis.

We will discuss fasting in other places, but in general, fasting was done in three ways:

No food and water, short time. Dan. 9

No food only, 40 days Christ and Moses

No sexual activity between married couples. 1 Cor 7:5

No food and/or water for shorter periods of time.

Continued Next Month.

### **Parables of New Clothe in Old Garment New Wine in Old Bottles**

***MAT 9:16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. 17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.***

***Mar 2:21 No man also seweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse. 22 And no man putteth new***

*wine into old bottles: else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.*

*Luk 5:36 And he spake also a parable unto them; No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old; if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new agreeth not with the old. 37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. 38 But new wine must be put into new bottles; and both are preserved.*

The Old Garment and Old Bottle were representative of the Old Covenant and the Old Covenant People, the House of Judah.

The New Bag and the New Bottle were the New Covenant and the New Covenant People Israel.

This was one of the doctrines that separated the ruling class in Judea from Christ. He made it clear that the lost sheep of the House of Israel would be brought back in covenant, but not to be patched back in with the corrupted House of Judah under the Old Covenant. The new covenant can not be patched into the old covenant. Neither could the people be reemerged physically as of old. This is the part that insulted the ruling class in Judea. They would not allow themselves to be set aside as the ruling class of the covenant people without a fight. A fight they got, but lost.

On the other hand, Christ made it clear that He would re-unite the two Houses of Israel, spiritually in Christ, with the New Wine, the Holy Spirit, under a New Covenant. This is what has been happening for over 2000 years in the church all over the world

If only the Kingdom people of today could see this truth that the New Covenant is not to become a part of the Old covenant. The New Covenant is really the fulfillment of the original Abrahamic covenant,. Too many are trying to keep the Old and patch in the new.

The Gospel also repulses those who falsely claim that they are the House of Judah. They are not capable of receiving the gospel and they do not want others to receive it either.

*MAT 23:13 But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.*

## **Jesus Heals Impotent man and Attends Second Passover**

*JOH 5:1 After this there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 2 Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches. 3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. 4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had. 5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years. 6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole? 7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me. 8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk. 9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took*

*up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the Sabbath. 10 The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the Sabbath day: it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed. 11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk. 12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk? 13 And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place. 14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee. 15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus, which had made him whole. 16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath day. 17 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work. 18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the Sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.*

Impotent simply means weak or sickly.

Now, we are beginning to see the true characteristics of the Canaanite, Edomite and His form of law.

A trait of God and His people is compassion and the need to reach an end. Meaning to get the job done.

To the Canaanite, it is more important to follow the rules. Much like our Canaanite bureaucrats today.

The Sabbath and Circumcision are the two outward signs the Canaanite and Edomite hung their hat on.

If an ox fell in the ditch on the Sabbath, too bad for the Canaanite Ox.

But the Godly know that saving the ox is more important than saving the Sabbath.

Jesus healed on the Sabbath. The Canaanite would rather the sick stay sick than be healed on the Sabbath. Therefore they go after Jesus Christ to kill him.

Today, many times our government is more interested in keeping their law and power than in helping people.

### **First Major Confrontation with the Edomite/Canaanite Pharisees and Sadducees.**

*JOH 5:19 Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things so ever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. 20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel. 21 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. 22 For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: 23 That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him. 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. 25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. 26 For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; 27 And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. 28 Marvel not at this: for*

*the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, 29 And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. 30 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me. 31 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. 32 There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. 33 Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. 34 But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved. 35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light. 36 But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. 37 And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape. 38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not. 39 Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. 40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. 41 I receive not honour from men. 42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. 43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. 44 How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? 45 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. 46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. 47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?*

Two Notes from this passage:

The word "all that are in the grave" v 28 To whom does this refer? If you say all men of all races, why not include all animals too. All is all. No, the all refers to those to whom the Bible was written, Gen 5:1, Adam and his descendants.

Those who have not the Word of God in them nor have they ever heard the voice of God or seen His shape. This eliminates them as covenant people. They were Canaanite, Edomite Jews.

The great divide came when

Christ identified Himself as God in the flesh.

When He said that a believing in Moses and God was not sufficient, they had to believe in Him

That Jesus did not ask anyone to believe in him, but rather if they were of God they already believed in Him and if they did not believe in Him it was evidence that they were not of God nor did they have the Word of God in them.

We must give special attention to what Jesus has to say about these people who reject Him hate Him and seek his death.

The heart of the Gospel is that God's people believe the Gospel, repent and obey the Gospel. If they do not, they are not His.

## More Sabbath issues

*MAT 12:1 At that time Jesus went on the Sabbath day through the corn; and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the ears of corn and to eat. 2 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the Sabbath day. 3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hungred, and they that were with him; 4 How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shewbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests? 5 Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the Sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the Sabbath, and are blameless? 6 But I say unto you, That in this place is one greater than the temple. 7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. 8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the Sabbath day.*

*MAR 2:23 And it came to pass, that he went through the corn fields on the Sabbath day; and his disciples began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. 24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the Sabbath day that which is not lawful? 25 And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him? 26 How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shewbread, which is not lawful to eat but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him? 27 And he said unto them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath: 28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.*

*LUK 6:1 And it came to pass on the second Sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields; and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands. 2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the Sabbath days? 3 And Jesus answering them said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungred, and they which were with him; 4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shewbread, and gave also to them that were with him; which it is not lawful to eat but for the priests alone? 5 And he said unto them, That the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.*

### *g. Withered hand healing on Sabbath*

*Mat 12:9 And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue: 10 And, behold, there was a man which had his hand withered. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath days? that they might accuse him. 11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? 12 How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the Sabbath days. 13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other. 14 Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him.*

*MAR 3:1 And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had a withered hand. 2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him. 3 And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand*



*forth. 4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the Sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace. 5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other. 6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.*

*LUK 6:6 And it came to pass also on another Sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered. 7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the Sabbath day; that they might find an accusation against him. 8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. 9 Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing; Is it lawful on the Sabbath days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy it? 10 And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other. 11 And they were filled with madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.*

The Herodians were Edomites appointed by herod to the Levitical offices where he had killed many of the blood lines of Levi and David and Aaron.

Here we have the Sabbath more important than the people again.

The Edomite Jews had made the law null and void by killing the spirit of the Law.

Jesus was infusing life back into the law and they hated Him for it.

## **4. REORGANIZING THE KINGDOM**

### **a. Multitudes healed**

*Matt 12:15 But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all; 16 And charged them that they should not make him known: 17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, 18 Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. 19 He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. 20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. 21 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.*

*MAR 3:7 But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judaea, 8 And from Jerusalem, and from Idumaea, and from beyond Jordan; and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him. 9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him because of the multitude, lest they should throng him. 10 For he had healed many; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. 11 And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art*

*the Son of God. 12 And he straitly charged them that they should not make him known.*

Jesus avoided all confrontation that could get Him killed or jailed early before His time. We should not take that as an example to live our life void of confrontation over convictions and truth.

Many Christians have been jailed, executed and had their possessions confiscated by evil rulers in order to stand for their faith.

### ***b. Jesus Selects 12 Apostles***

*MAR 3:13 And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto him. 14 And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, 15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils: 16 And Simon he surnamed Peter; 17 And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James; and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder: 18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and Simon the Canaanite, 19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went into an house.*

*LUK 6:12 And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God. 13 And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples: and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named apostles; 14 Simon, (whom he also named Peter,) and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew, 15 Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon called Zelotes, 16 And Judas the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitor.*

## ***ZEALOTES***

A. Noun.

zelotes (2207) is used adjectivally, of "being zealous" (a) "of the Law," Act 21:20; (b) "toward God," lit., "of God," Act 22:3, RV, "for God"; (c) "of spiritual gifts," 1Co 14:12, i.e., for exercise of spiritual gifts (lit., "of spirits," but not to be interpreted literally); (d) "for (KJV, 'of') the traditions of my fathers," Gal 1:14, of Paul's loyalty to Judaism before his conversion; (e) "of good works," Tit 2:14.

The word is, lit., "a zealot," i.e., "an uncompromising partisan." The "Zealots" was a name applied to an extreme section of the Pharisees, bitterly antagonistic to the Romans. Josephus (Antiq. xviii. 1. 1, 6; B. J. ii. 8. 1) refers to them as the "fourth sect of Jewish philosophy" (i.e., in addition to the Pharisees, Sadducees, and Essenes), founded by Judas of Galilee (cf. Act 5:37). After his rebellion in A.D. 6, the Zealots nursed the fires of revolt, which, bursting out afresh in A.D. 66, led to the destruction of Jerusalem in 70. To this sect Simon, one of the apostles, had belonged, Luk 6:15; Act 1:13. The equivalent Hebrew and Aramaic term was

"Cananaean" (Mat 10:4); this is not connected with Canaan, as the KJV "Canaanite" would suggest, but is derived from Heb. qanna, "jealous."

The word Canaanite should not be used. The Greek word is ὁCananaeanö, not connected with Canaan, according to W.E. Vine. Simon was not of mixed racial descent. All of the Apostles were Hebrews and most of them from the Tribe of Benjamin.

### *c. Gathering for the Sermon On the Mount*

*LUK 6:17 And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judaea and Jerusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; 18 And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed. 19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and healed them all.*

### *Sermon on the Mount*

*MAT 5:1 And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him:*

*2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,*

*LUK 6:20 And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said,*

This is not a message to be generalized to all people in all countries under all conditions. The enemy knows how to use the Scriptures against us and make us feel guilty. They tried it on Jesus but He was too smart. Example: Should we give tribute to Caesar? Another was when they tried to blame Moses for the Divorce situation.

Jesus knew how to rightly Divide the word of truth. Many Christians don't. Just because a verse says something does not mean that you are the target of an attempt to get you to do wrong.

When the world tries to use the peace maker praise of this passage to justify the UN, it is wrong

When the race mixers try to use this passage to call Christians Haters because they don't promote the world view of race mixing, it is wrong.

So first of all, let's see what this sermon on the mount is all about.

It is given to His disciples and followers who were for the majority, Israelites, kinsmen of the Hebrews, those who were Adamites, and at least once in the past in the covenant of Abraham.

There fore, this material applies to people of the household of faith

Secondly, it was given at a time when special circumstances existed in their lives, like being in captivity and under the laws of enemy nations.

Also, they lived before the return of the Holy Spirit and during a time when the old Covenant Law was still being read and administered.

Also, Christ had chosen His Apostles and was preparing them to go teach and prepare the way of His coming and the coming of the Holy Spirit.

## ***POOR***

***3 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.***

***Luk 6:20 Blessed be ye poor: for yours is the kingdom of God. 24 But woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation.***

Only Adamites have a spirit and the Spirit of God. They were now without that Spirit of God and ðPoor in Spiritö No other people could be said to be ðpoor in spiritö. But this was great news for Christ has come and these people poor in spirit are about to be made rich in spirit.

## ***MOURN***

***4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.***

***Luk 6:21 Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh. 24 Woe unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep***

This word Mourn has to do with the national wailing of the people for their plight under the Romans and without a covenant relationship, no Saviour, no king, etc. Again, these people are soon to be comforted. The Holy Spirit is the Comforter

## ***~Role of the Spirit***

***JOH 14:16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;***

***JOH 14:26 But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.***

***JOH 15:26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me:***

***JOH 16:7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.***

## ***MEEK***

***5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.***

This is the ability to believe current circumstances are in the good providence of God for you.

***Rom 8:28-29 are old standby verses used by believers from centuries.***

The early Christians were very strong in this faith because they were persecuted and killed more than any other generation of Christians until the dark ages.

Moses was described as being meek above all Adamites. He inherited God's kingdom as it was in the early stages.

Those who are meek toward God in all things will inherit the Spirit and then the kingdom and then the earth.

Those who insist on having it their way now will not have in the future. Edomites and Canaanites are examples. Christ was saying to the crowd, you are not overseers today, but if you can wait in the Lord, your time will come.

### ***HUNGER AND THIRST AFTER RIGHTEOUSNESS***

***6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.***

***Luk 6:21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. 25 Woe unto you that are full! for ye shall hunger.***

The word *ōrighteousnessō* in the Bible has always referred to those who were in a right relationship with God and secondly with man. This right relationship has to be based on justice. Justice in our God relationship requires our death or a substitute.

Jesus Christ was saying this people who had longed for the substitute come; He was here and the time was now. The day of righteousness was now.

This in turn would produce people who could be just with one another. The hunger and thirst was the sign that you indeed was one for whom Christ had come.

### ***MERCIFUL***

***7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.***

Christ was about to die and give the greatest example of mercy. This mercy was to be given and shown to this people to whom He was speaking and to their descendants. They in turn would be expected to give mercy to one another.

Later Jesus would re-iterate this in the Lord's Prayer and again in a parable of the unmerciful steward. We are not to have a *ōtolerantō* attitude with sin, but a merciful attitude toward brethren.

### ***PURE IN HEART***

***8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.***

Two words here important here:

Pure- ceremonially and physically

Heart- emotions mind & will

This was the preparation that was needed in order to recognize and believe in Christ. This was the work of John the Baptist and then Christ, Himself. When they were gone, it would be the Holy Spirit who would do this work. Today, the reason we do not have pure hearts among the people is because the Holy Spirit is not doing a work. I believe this is primarily due to the lack of Law/Word preaching in the pulpits.

God does not usually reveal Himself to those who are not looking or seeking Him with pure motives and will.

It is true that God has reached down and rescued the Pauls of the world, but as much as Paul knew about the Scriptures, He truly was seeking God. He wound up persecuting Christians believing that He was pleasing God. Paul wanted to please God.

It is this seeking to find and please God that is first and foremost. I doubt seriously that those who have no desire to fear God, ever find God.

I learned the hard way that people who reject me, my church, my beliefs and even much of my interpretation of Scripture are not necessarily lost or outside the gift of God's grace. Many seek and find the Lord without me.

Christ confirmed this teaching when He said the fields are white unto harvest. I am not sure the fields are white unto harvest today, but they were at that time.

### ***THE PEACEMAKERS***

***Mat 5:9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.***

This passage has to do with those who work at, initiate and plan for peaceful existence between God and His people and among the people of God.

In order to have peace, there must be reconciliation. This requires a recognition of wrong doing, confession, forgiveness and acceptance of forgiveness with intent to maintain the relationship under the terms of the agreement.

If peace does not exist, then hurt, hatred and confusion abound. If there is no standard of just law then the innocent get hurt and destroyed.

Confusion is the work of evil. So today in our land we have an existence of confusion and frustration because of crime and economic slavery due to racial and cultural mixing, bad money and corrupt rulers. There cannot be reconciliation between two people who have different gods who have different law. That is why God insisted that Israel have only one law for all people. In other words, when people came to the land of Israel from other gods and cultures, they had to give up those gods and cultures in order to live in peace in the new land.

We do not have peace in the land because we want to accommodate the cultures and gods of all the people who come to this land. It will not work because it cannot work. No land can have peace and prosperity with more than one God and more than one Law.

For example, the god of some people allows abortion. The God of the Christian does not.

The god of some people allows stealing what you need. The God of the Christian does not. The god of some people allows murderers to live in prison at the expense of the murdered. The God of the Christian says that He will curse the land that builds prisons and helps a murderer stay alive.

The god of some people supports Sodomites and inter racial mixing. The God of the Christian does not.

Therefore, the peacemaker is the one who insists that the land keep the law of God in all matters, insists that his family follows the laws of God and insists that government keep the laws of God.

### ***THE PERSECUTED***

***Mat 5:10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. 11 Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. 12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.***

***Luk 6:22 Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. 23 Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in heaven:***

***for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets. . 26 Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.***

Persecution is defined as,

One receiving harassment, pressure, peer pressure, fear or intimidation for his or her beliefs in and practice of faith in the God of the Bible (Christ, the law, etc).

General harassment and problems do not count. Being persecuted for false religion does not count.

Those who practice false religion are to be exiled or executed.

We are taught today that toleration is the sign of maturity. But God says that those who love Him will separate themselves from the people of other gods. Because of this other people, evil men and rulers will persecute you by shunning you, slandering you in the press and even using government powers to prosecute you and take your possessions.

As Peter says it:

***1 Pet 4:12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you:***

***13 But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.***

***14 If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.***

***15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evildoer, or as a busybody in other men's matters.***

***16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf.***

### ***Salt and light***

***Mat 5:13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. 16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.***

***MAR 9:50 Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.***

***LUK 14:34 Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned?***

Salt is a necessity for life, has been used as money and wars have been fought over it.

The covenant of salt was a covenant to be preserved and have long life.

God's covenant people are called the "salt of the earth." Salt preserves, heals and seasons pleasantly. Salt in a sore is irritating and painful.

With this in mind, God's people are to preserve society from putrefaction. We are to be a pleasant seasoning to the life of all. We, as salt, therefore have two vulnerabilities. One is the

trait of irritation. When we apply our salt to an open sore of sin in society we irritate. Second, the tendency to be flat and loose our saltiness, making us useless to God and society.

This makes for a frightening dilemma. If we do our job, we irritate those around us. If we don't do our job, we become worthless. The result of worthlessness will be a stampede to run over us with criticism, government policy and general life activities.

Jesus was truly correct when He said that we would be as lambs among the wolves.

### ***The Fulfillment of the Law***

***Matt 5:17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. 18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. 19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. 20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.***

This is one of the areas that many preachers avoid today. The doctrine of *õno lawö* or antinomianism, is popular. You can avoid naming sin and major on preaching love and grace. But the problem is that there is no grace without law.

Jesus Christ made it plain that He did not come to alter or eliminate the law. He came to fulfill the law, especially that which related to the ceremonial law. The ceremonial law was not removed or done away. It was fulfilled in Christ. The law is still there. We still need a lamb. But Christ is that lamb. We still need a sin offering and Christ is that offering. We still need a priest to intercede and Christ is that High Priest. The laws are still on the books. The law is still in effect. So are all the other laws.

The laws of feasts and Sabbaths are still on the books, and our Sabbaths and feasts are in Christ. Look at the parables Jesus gave of the feasts! The only ceremony we have left today is the Lord's Supper and Baptism. The only feast left is the feast of tabernacles. The reason we don't keep it is because we are not yet at the feast of the Bride. We are fasting in His absence.

The Bible still says that *õsin* is the violation of the laws of God.

***1JO 3:4 Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.***

If there is no law, then there is no sin. If there is no sin there can be no grace. If a policeman stops you and says, you are driving 70 miles an hour, but I am going to have grace on you and not give you a ticket, you may feel good until you find out there was no speed limit or law prohibiting you from driving 70 MPH.

Then what do you feel. Contempt! Why would this cop stop me for driving 70 mph when it is perfectly lawful and un-prohibited?

The same is true with preachers and church members. Most members are rebelling against preachers because they keep saying they are sinners and need a saviour, but at the same time they are saying that Jesus Christ died and abolished the law. If Christ abolished the law, why do we need a saviour.? I need a saviour because I have sinned against the Law/Word of God, Jesus Christ.



When preachers teach that God is love and tolerates anyone and everything, God becomes contemptible to society.

When preachers teach that divorced and remarried people can start over as if nothing happened and they can become pastors deacons, Elders and officers of churches and governments, they make God a liar and make the truth contemptible resulting in faulty churches and faulty government we now have.

These teachings are seriously flawed and make the salt of God unsalted and subject to being trampled by the world.

## ***Murder***

***Mat 5:21 Ye have heard that it was said of them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: 22 But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. 23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.***

The word ðkillö is murder or to do murder; including the motive and desire to kill. This does not include self defense, war, or accidental killing.

Christ says that in order to stop the killing there must be a change in thinking. You cannot have hate and contempt for a man's (brother's) ideas and be neutral. You cannot desire another person's property to the point of stealing it and be void of murder if you kill him to have the possession. To incite anger at a man and his property is evidence of motive for murder.

Racca = Stupid or contempt for your head, your thinking

Fool = Character, a question of the heart and motives.

These attitudes are directly related to your relationship to God. You cannot come to the altar while holding hatred or anger toward a brother. God simply does not hear you or anyone else who prays for you, except to convict you. This certainly includes your spouse and your parents and children.

## ***HOW TO REACT TO THREATS FROM OTHERS***

***Mat 5:25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. 26 Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.***

This is a verse that today's patriots and bull headed Israelites need to heed. When an officer pulls you over, this is not the time to get into an argument, use curse words, become angry and in general make the officer feel threatened. If you cannot claim your rights and put forth your position without this kind of reaction you should simply remain speechless. Learn to respond, ðl

want to comply with your request, butí ..ö then give your reason calmly. Try to do everything you can without causing agitation.

If you rile the person who has authority, you will pay the full price before you get out. As we become more and more the enemies of the press and the government and the law enforcement, we will have plenty of opportunity to use this truth.

We no longer live in a constitutionally free Christian republic. We live under a government very similar to that of the Roman Empire in the time of Christ.

*Continued next Month*

### *Adultery*

*Mat 5:27 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: 28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. 29 And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. 30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.*

ADULTERY Means to adulterate or mix. The mixing of or adulterating seed of God's lineage is adultery. This can be the mixing of seeds (New born) racially by the male and female being of different races. This can also be the mixing of seed (Child) by the female who has more than one seed/male or by the man who would mix his seed in the woman who already has had a man.

The only exception is when the spouse of one dies. God in His own way and for His own reasons causes that person to be able to come together with another without mixing the seed or adulterating the seed.

Committing adultery happens in the heart before it happens in the flesh. The best way to prevent adultery in the flesh is to prevent it in the heart.

### *LOOKING AND LUSTING*

Jesus once again puts the onus on the man who looks and lusts after a woman. But God also puts the onus on the woman in other Scriptures:

***1TI 2:9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array;***

This brings us to an important issue. If men are not to look and lust, is it not wrong for women to put in front of him that which will make him look and lust? And is it not wrong for the man to purposefully go where those things exist that make him look and lust?

Let me be specific. It is wrong for a woman to dress with revealing clothes to make a man lust. A woman who would do this is referred to in Scripture as a harlot.

It is also a fact that most of the TV, movies, music and entertainment of the world is filled with material to make a man look and lust. Therefore, that material should not be watched.

Neither should men or women attend bars and drink alcohol that looses their moral restraints to looking and lusting.

### ***THINE EYE AND RIGHT HAND***

It falls squarely to the man to discipline himself not to look and touch. If your eye will not be controlled take it out. If you can't keep your hands to your self, cut them off.

### ***Divorce***

***Mat 5:31 It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: 32 But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.***

These verses go with the ones above on adultery. Divorcing or putting your wife away (Both the same in my understanding) causes her to commit adultery and a man cannot marry a divorced woman without committing adultery.

Again, God looks very seriously on this matter of divorce and remarriage. The result is mixed seed. Mixed seed (children) may have a limited spiritual capacity that will prevent them from being obedient to parents and God and prevent them from being in the Kingdom or limit their capacity within the kingdom. We will deal with divorce much more in detail later. There are questions about adultery before marriage, in the marriage, after the marriage, before conversion and after conversion. What about a second and third divorce? Too much to cover here. Just leave it to be said that God is against divorce and remarriage, no matter who has done it and seems to have escaped consequences.

Preachers do a sinful service against God when they marry divorced people and allowed divorced and remarried people to hold office in the church.

### ***Oaths***

***Mat 5:33 Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: 34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: 35 Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. 36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. 37 But let your communication***

*be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.*

The purpose of this passage is to prevent two or three things. One, if you make a promise or pledge, keep it.

Two, it is better not to pledge or promise.

Three, don't threaten to perform and then not perform.

If you are called to testify against someone on a crime and you have knowledge that they committed the crime as defined by Scripture, then you have an obligation to testify and tell the truth.

If you are being asked to frame someone in a trial, refuse to take the oath and refuse to give false testimony. It might cost you jail time for contempt, but it is better than foreswearing or entrapping some one wrongly.

The third issue has to do with threatening to hurt, punish or harm someone. Threats are considered oaths under some conditions. If you are a parent and you threaten your child with certain consequences for his actions, then you are obligated to give them. If you are not going to give them, to threaten them is wrong and morally scars your child.

### *An Eye for an Eye*

*Mat 5:38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth:*

*39 But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.*

*40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.*

*41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.*

*42 Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.*

We must rightly divide the Scriptures. One passage by itself is insufficient to stand alone. 2 Pet 1:20

What or who has authority? When it comes to payback We have very little authority. Our power is to separate from an offender

Civil government is to punish breaches of God's law. God, Himself imposes vengeance.

We are asked to help those who offend us when they are in need. This piles on coals of fire by the Lord.

*PRO 25:21 If thine enemy be hungry, give him bread to eat; and if he be thirsty, give him water to drink:*

*22 For thou shalt heap coals of fire upon his head, and the LORD shall reward thee.*

The word ðenemyö = hate. Not about an individual or gang that is trying to kill you or rob from you. This passage is not about letting offenders go free. This about our brethren who have offended us or even hate us for some reason.

### ***Love for Enemies***

*Mat 5:43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.*

*44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;*

*45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.*

*46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same?*

*47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so?*

*48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect*

*Luk 6:27 But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you, 28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.*

*29 And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloak forbid not to take thy coat also.*

*30 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again.*

*31 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.*

*32 For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. 33 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.*

*34 And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again.*

*35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.*

The word for enemy here is not government agents and the wicked Canaanites. We are talking rather about the person who is hateful, hostile, ignores you. Heap coals of fire on him with your kindness and hospitality.

### **Giving to the Needy**

*Mat 6:1 Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.*

*2 Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.*

*3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:*

***4 That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly.***

Many people quote this passage when they refuse to use an offering envelope to give their offerings in church. But this is not talking about your tithe tax obligations to God and the church. This is talking about the additional money you may give to the poor and needy. Do it in secret, unknown to the general public. God will reward you openly. God has never approved of the saints giving their taxes, (tithe) to anyone other than the Priest/Levite.

God does expect us to give to the poor, but not the tithe/tax to the poor.

### **Prayer**

***Mat 6:5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.***

***6 But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.***

***7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.***

***8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.***

***Mat 6:9 After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.***

***10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.***

***11 Give us this day our daily bread.***

***12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.***

***13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.***

***14 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you:***

***15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.***

~

There are three levels of praying:

### **Level I. Grade School level, Self**

That is what He is teaching here. The Lord's prayer is the simplest form of prayer.

### ***Level 2: High School level or Intercessory Prayer, Others***

This is called in the theological arena as "Intercessory" prayer. You are interceding on behalf of others.

### ***Level 3: College Level, Imprecatory praying against evil***

Imprecatory prayer is the most powerful praying. It is the prayer to invoke God's intervention into the acts by the wicked against the church of the Lord Jesus Christ. Imprecatory praying is not a magical tool to be used by individuals against personal persecutors or enemies, but rather to be used against the enemies of God.

Recently a newspaper man mocked God by saying that the Christians of the Bible belt were being squashed into grease spots on the highway by their god.

I for one prayed that God not allow His heritage to be humiliated by the wicked.

Even though judgment begins at the house of the Lord, meaning the people of God, the wicked will be destroyed by the Lord for their arrogance and hostility against God and His people.

Our problem today is that our people want to pray against evil but have not developed the first two levels of praying God does not answer imprecatory praying of people who do not know how and who do not practice daily praying the first two levels of prayer or have dirty hands so to speak.

It is unfortunate that this model prayer has become known as the Lord's prayer. This is a model prayer. It can be prayed of course if it fits the need. But many people want to talk to God about something specific and they use this model prayer. It is true that you can go to God in such a burden and not knowing how to pray for the results, that the Holy Spirit will pray for us. But people who claim to be Christian and have a relationship with God should have enough practice talking to God that they would not need a model prayer to convey their heart's desires.

The purpose of the model prayer was to give an example of the things that should be brought to God on a daily Basis.

**Our Father:** A recognition that we are the children of God.

**Who art in heaven:** The God of the Bible

**Hallowed be thy Name:** We must recognize His divinity

**Thy Kingdom come:** The ungodly are not looking forward to the laws and rule of Christ on earth. Unfortunately, neither are many professing Christians. If you mention having God's laws as our laws, people act paranoid.

**Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven:** Seeking the kingdom of God and His will is the bottom line in prayer.

**Give us this day our Daily bread:** We must rely on God daily for our needs, not government

**Forgive us our debts as we forgive our debtors:** This has to do with our sins against God and the offenses of others against us. If we cannot forgive our brethren of their trespasses against us, how can we expect God to forgive us.

**Lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil:** Temptation means testing or trials, evil means the same thing.

**For thine is the kingdom, the power and the glory for ever, amen:** The kingdom is His, the Power or authority is His, the glory or self elation is His

Every prayer should recognize our father

Adore His being

Ask for our needs

Ask forgiveness and name those we forgive

Ask for a peaceful life free of trials and anxieties.

Ask for deliverance from those trials in which God allows us to be in.

Don't pray in public places for show  
Don't use vain repetition as the heathen (Jews & Muslims)  
God knows what you need before you pray.  
Prayer is for you not for God.

## ***Fasting***

***Mat 6:16 Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. 17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; 18 That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.***

Fasting is a unique task. If you boast about it or make a show of it, it is ineffective. Fasting is for the purpose of controlling the flesh in body and soul. The appetites of the flesh are controlled by starvation of those desires. Fasting was and is used by many religions.

The Catholic church adopted the old fasting rituals of the Canaanites and Baal worship known as lent, ash Wednesday and others. They put a mark of ash on their forehead to show the world they are fasting. Today that fasting has been reduced to giving up one or two sins for a short time.

True fasting was to bring weeping and wailing against the flesh and its power permanently. It was a time of true repentance from all known sin for ever. It was a timer of consecration and dedication to God of the body and the self.

Christians should fast today. But I do not have much confidence in fasting that goes beyond the home as a hidden covenant among family members. This seems to be Paul's idea also

***1CO 7:5 Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.***

Here Paul was referring even to abstinence of sexual pleasure between man and wife.  
Fasting is not a religious ritual, but rather a crying of one's heart against his own sin.

## ***Treasures in Heaven***

***Mat 6:19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal:***

***20 But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal:***

***21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.***

***22 The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light.***

***23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that***



*is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!*

*24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.*

### **Do Not Worry-seek first the kingdom**

*Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?*

*26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?*

*27 Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?*

*28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin:*

*29 And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.*

*30 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?*

*31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?*

*32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.*

*33 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.*

*34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof. ~*

I have never heard any other preacher teach all these verses together, but they are all related to the subject of making a living and the subject of wealth gathering and life's necessities.

We are to have our eye single or focused on the kingdom work.

We are not to have our eye focused on making and accumulating money and wealth.

We are to use our life and focus on the kingdom.

Heaven here is referring to God's plan or place. The Bible speaks of three heavens. The first is the air and space around the earth, the second is the stars and celestial bodies, the third is the abode of God. None of these are described as places where people go permanently when they die.

Laying up treasures in heaven does not mean you are sending bricks up for a mansion in the sky. Christ has laid out the application of rewards which are in reality responsibility to rule cities or areas of territory in the kingdom.

We are to provide for our families and those brethren in need.. Then we are to use any other resources for God's work. We are not to accumulate great wealth in terms of money to be passed to children to squander.

### ***Judging Others***

***Mat 7:1 Judge not, that ye be not judged.***

*2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.*

*3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?*

*4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye?*

*5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.*

*6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.*

*Luk 6:37 Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:*

*38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.*

*Luk 6:39 And he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?*

*40 The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master.*

*41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye?*

*42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.*

#### **Matt 7:1**

To "judge" here [krinete (NT:2919)] does not exactly mean to pronounce condemnatory judgment [katakrinein (NT:2635)]; nor does it refer to simple judging at all, whether favorable or the reverse. The context makes it clear that the thing here condemned is that disposition to look unfavorably on the character and actions of others, which leads invariably to the pronouncing of rash, unjust, and unlovely judgments upon them. No doubt it is the judgments so pronounced which are here spoken of; but what our Lord aims at is the spirit out of which they spring. Provided we eschew this unlovely spirit, we are not only warranted to sit in judgment upon a brother's character and actions, but, in the exercise of a necessary discrimination, are often constrained to do so for our own guidance. It is the violation of the law of love involved in the exercise of a censorious disposition which alone is here condemned. And the argument against it-"that ye be not judged"-confirms this: 'that your own character and actions be not pronounced upon with the like severity;' that is, at the great day.

(from Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown Commentary, )

These passages have nothing to do with condemning those who make sinful choices. The ability to make choices is a God given gift. We sin against God when we refuse to discriminate evil.

This has to do with being judgmental against a brother who has different ideas and tastes but

they are not sinful. Anything that is sinful requires our condemnation

This has to do with a self righteous attitude toward another person. We need to teach truth, but understand that we still have ignorance on some things and we all needed time to grow.

We have to give room for the Holy Spirit to work in our hearts and the hearts of our brethren..

### **Ask, Seek, Knock**

*Mat 7:7 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you:*

*8 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.*

*9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?*

*10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?*

*11 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?*

*12 Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.*

This is not a blank check. But it is God's encouragement to us that He wants to give us good things and things that are good for us. A new car might not be good for you.

Examples: Teens who got a new car and got killed. People who won the lottery and were worse off

Remember, we had the sample prayer a while back and also in 1 John 3:5 we are told that we must ask in God's will, and ask for His glory.

If God can't trust you to tithe on \$5.00 an hour, why should He trust you to tithe on \$10.00 an hour.

### **The Narrow and Wide Gates**

*Mat 7:13 Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: 14 Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.*

More people going to the broad gate. Fewer in the strait gate. Strait, means restricted on both sides not allowing choice.

The strait gate is the entrance with God's law as the restriction. If you are not willing to be restrained and restricted by the law of God you cannot enter the kingdom.

Destruction has reference not to hell, but this life primarily. If you don't follow God's laws, you, your home, your family and your nation will disintegrate and be destroyed.

This is the fatal flaw of the churches today. They preach so much love, come as you are, believe only, that the churches are filled with fatally flawed conversions.

God's way is a restricted (strait) way.

## *A Tree and Its Fruit*

*Mat 7:15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. 16 Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? 17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. 18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. 20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. 21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. 22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? 23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.*

*Luk 6:43 For a good tree bringeth not forth good fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 44 For every tree is known by his own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. 45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.*

This is a very important passage. The truth of this passage is that the fruit of a tree is determined by its root stock.

*ACT 13:26 Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent.*

*PHI 3:5 Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee;*

Christ uses two examples of each. The grape and the fig. Everyone loved these fruit. What he was saying is, don't try to get fruit from a tree that does not produce fruit. The counter examples were thorns and thistles.

No one would ever walk up to a thorn or thistle bush and try to get fruit. Why would you water it, fertilize it and cultivate it? You wouldn't

We know that the stock of Adam can bear fruit. Fruit is produced by the Holy Spirit. Adamites can have a spirit and the Spirit.

On the other hand, non-Adamites do not have a spirit and cannot have the Spirit. They cannot produce fruit. Therefore, why do we cultivate them to have fruit. Thorns and thistles have a function in the ecological scheme of things, but they are to be controlled. If they are not controlled, they will take over the land and kill the fruit bearing trees.

What is the fruit?

Prophecy and casting out demons is not the fruit. It is obvious that false prophets could do both or at least give the impression they could do both; just as the false prophets of pharaoh could perform certain seemingly miracles.

Jesus addressed this specifically to the disciples about false prophets. Prophets were the handlers of the Word of God and the laws of the land as well as the source of truth. If they had, had news papers, television and radio in those days, they would have been the leaders in these fields. In other words, the prophet was the source of information and direction for the people of the nation.

False prophets use alleged miracles to convince people that they are prophets. True prophets generally give forth the truth which is unpopular and are persecuted. Today the false radio and television preachers deceive many a gullible professing Christian.

Today, the wicked use science to produce seemingly miracles and then use their presses, internet and media to spread their so-called good news. Christians have been listening to the false prophets of science and media so long they have stopped listening to the prophets of God and the Bible.

True prophets can look at a practice or belief in society and predict several years into the future what the result of that action or belief will be. Few listen.

The false prophet is only interested in supplying salve to the hurting for the moment so he or she can reap payment and proceeds from the people.

We have had good prophets in our land at every step of national demise. We had preachers and news papers who warned of the public school movement, the 13th and 14th amendments in the mid 1800s. We had preachers and teachers who warned of the League of nations, the United Nations, Social Security, rock music, the sex education culture, Sodomy, abortion and all other sins that have invaded our land.

But those seeking immediate gratification and prosperity ignored those warnings and as predicted those sins are now coming home to roost and God has blinded the eyes of the people so they cannot see the cause or the cure.

It takes more than believing in Jesus to fix sin. There has to be a rooting out of the man made laws that have violated the laws of God.

Our problem today is that we are being led as a nation by false prophets and the people like it so.

***JER 5:31 The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and my people love to have it so: and what will ye do in the end thereof?***

### ***~The Wise and Foolish Builders***

***Matt 7:24 Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: 25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. 26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. 28 And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine: 29 For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.***

***Luk 6:46 And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? 47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like: 48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the***

*foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. 49 But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great.*

The foundation to life and eternal life is Christ who is the living Word.

*1CO 3:11 For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.*

Yet Christ says it is His word, these sayings. He was speaking of those things which He taught on the Mount. Jesus is God, Jesus is the Word. The Word is God.

Luke adds the statement made by Christ, "Why call me Lord, Lord and do not the things I say." Once again, we see that becoming a Christian means taking on a commitment to a new set of law, a whole new way of life.

Up until a few years ago, in America that was not hard because we as a nation used the Laws of God as the basis for our own laws. However, with the immigration of millions of people who have a new god and a new law, we have given up God's Law to accommodate them. This is causing us to cease to be a Christian nation and a nation that angers God.

The Bible asks the question:

*PSA 11:3 If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do?*

We as individual Christians and as a nation are in serious trouble. The major problem is that we now have two generations of people who do not know what it means to be a Christian or to rear their children in the Lord.

## ***THE END OF THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT!***

*8:1 When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.*

*PSA 11:3 If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do?*

---

## ***5. SECOND CIRCUIT***

### ***a. Healing of the Centurion's Servant***

*MAT 8:5 And when Jesus was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, 6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented. 7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him. 8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed. 9 For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and*



*to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it. 10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. 11 And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. 12 But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour.*

*LUK 7:1 Now when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum. 2 And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die. 3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant. 4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this: 5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue. 6 Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof: 7 Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but say in a word, and my servant shall be healed. 8 For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it. 9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. 10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.*

Again, we have the Lord healing to further his work and identification. However, in this case, we have an unusual person requesting help for another. We have no idea who the servant was that was healed. We do not know if the servant was Israelite, Adamite or otherwise. We do not know if the servant was male or female. But a great principle is here given.

We know that the Centurion, (meaning a commander over 100 men) was a Roman soldier. Only those who were loyal to Rome were made commanders. Therefore if he was Israelite, He would have been from the dispersed, not from Judea. If he were not of Israel, he would have been from the great masses of Adamites who made up the world empires.

The great principle shown here is that we as God's spirit people and dominion people are here to bring the blessings of God on all people of all races. That does not mean that we can make them covenant people or bring them into a spirit relationship, but we can pray down healing, prosperity and other blessings along with teaching them the law.

This man had lots of faith in Christ. He saw that when Jesus Christ spoke, the blind see, the diseases flee, the demons and mental illness go and the storms stop, the waves cease.

Therefore, this officer, said to Christ, I understand the principle of authority. I am commanded to come and go. I come and go. I command men to come and go. They come and go. You can command diseases to leave. I am not worthy of your presence in my house, so just make the command.

This was more faith than had been demonstrated in Judea. Jesus said I have not seen this kind of faith in Judea. The word Israel was used, because officially at this time, the 10 dispersed tribes of Israel were not in the Israel covenant.

Christ healed a person, unknown to others and maybe not of the same race or faith based on the condition of the requester.

*(Continued next month)*

Still on Jesus's second circuit into areas outside of Jerusalem.

Still performing Miracles

### ***B. Raising the Widow's Son at Nain***

*LUK 7:11 And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people. 12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her. 13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. 14 And he came and touched the bier: and they that bare him stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. 15 And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he delivered him to his mother. 16 And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us; and, That God hath visited his people. 17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judaea, and throughout all the region round about.*

Another demonstration He was the Messiah. Jesus was God in the flesh with power over death.



### **c. Jesus Discusses Various Topics.**

#### **John the Baptist Commended**

*MAT 11:2 Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,  
3 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?*

John the Baptist, the greatest, according to Jesus Christ, still had doubts about who Jesus was.

*4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:  
5 The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.  
And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me.*

Jesus told John's disciples to look at his miracles. Only the Messiah could fulfill the prophecies concerning these miracles.

*7 And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind?  
8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses.  
9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet.  
10 For this is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.  
11. Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.*

This has been a mystery . What was Jesus saying? Was John not in the Kingdom? When and where is the kingdom?

The kingdom of heaven was reference to the rule of our lives by the indwelling Holy Spirit. That Spirit left when Adam and Eve were expelled from the Garden of Eden, because of sin.

The Holy Spirit would be given back to the Elect, the race of Adam, the people of God on the day of Pentecost. John the Baptist and all before him never experienced the greatness of the indwelling spirit.

The Kingdom of heaven began on the Day of Pentecost when the Holy Spirit came down and entered the people of God from 13 different countries.

*12 And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.  
13 For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John.*

*14 And if ye will receive it, this is Elias, which was for to come. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.*

Until John, the kingdom had been in captivity to the Nations, Babylon, Persia, Greece, and now Rome. After the Holy Spirit enter into His people that bondage would cease over time. In 300 AD the Roman Empire fell. In 1776 America won her freedom. Following that, the NATO nations, which represent all of the regathered tribes of Israel, have become the leaders in the world.

The next step is the return of the king and the renewal of the covenant of marriage to the Lord.

*LUK 7:18 And the disciples of John shewed him of all these things. 19 And John calling unto him two of his disciples sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come? or look we for another? 20 When the men were come unto him, they said, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come? or look we for another? 21 And in that same hour he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits; and unto many that were blind he gave sight. 22 Then Jesus answering said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard; how that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached. 23 And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me. 24 And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the wind? 25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings' courts. 26 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet. 27 This is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. 28 For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he. 29 And all the people that heard him, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. 30 But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.*

#### **Wickedness Condemned (Parable of Pipers)**

*MAT 11:16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows, 17 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented. 18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil. 19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified of her children.*

The children setting in the market place are the Pharisees and lawyers of the Jews. Jesus sarcastically called them children. They loves praise and recognition.

Jesus spoke of their attempt to try and get everyone to agree with them. They condemned John the Baptist because he neither ate or drank. They condemned Jesus because He did eat and drink.

Children of Wisdom are the Israelite children who do not dance to their music.

*LUK 7:31 And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like? 32 They are like unto children sitting in the marketplace, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept. 33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil. 34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold a gluttonous man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners! 35 But wisdom is justified of all her children.*

### **3 Cities Reproved**

*MAT 11:20 Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not: 21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. 22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. 23 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. 24 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.*

#### **Barnes Commentary**

**Matt 11:23**

[Chorazin and Bethsaida] These were towns not far from Capernaum, but the precise situation is unknown. See "The Land and the Book" (Thomson), vol. ii. pp. 8, 9. Bethsaida means literally a "house of hunting" or "a house of game," and it was probably situated on the banks of the Sea of Galilee, and supported itself by hunting or fishing. It was the residence of Philip, Andrew, and Peter, John 1:44. It was enlarged by Philip the Tetrarch, and called "Julia," after the emperor's daughter.

[Tyre and Sidon] These were cities of Phoenicia, formerly very opulent, and distinguished for merchandise. They were situated on the shore of the Mediterranean Sea, and were in the western part of Judea. They were therefore well known to the Jews. Tyre is frequently mentioned in the Old Testament as being the place through which Solomon derived many of the materials for building the temple, 2 Chron 2:11-16. It was also a place against which one of the most important and pointed prophecies of Isaiah was directed. See the notes at Isa 23. Compare Ezek 26:4-14. Both these cities were very ancient. Sidon was situated within the bounds of the tribe of Asher (Josh 19:28), but this tribe could never get possession of it, Judg 1:31. It was famous for its great trade and navigation. Its inhabitants were the first remarkable merchants in the world, and were much celebrated for their luxury. In the time of our Saviour it was probably a city of much splendor and extensive commerce. It is now called Seide, or Saide, and is far less populous and splendid than it was in the time of Christ. It was subdued successively by the Babylonians, Egyptians, and Romans, the latter of whom deprived it of its freedom.

Messrs. Fisk and King, American missionaries, passed through Sidon in the summer of

1823, and estimated the population, as others have estimated it, at 8,000 or 10,000; but Mr. Goodell, another American missionary, took up his residence there in June, 1824, for the purpose of studying the Armenian language with a bishop of the Armenian Church who lives there, and of course had far better opportunities to know the statistics of the place. He tells us there are six Muslim mosques, a Jewish synagogue, a Maronite, Latin, and Greek church. Dr. Thomson ("The Land and the Book," vol. i. p. 164) supposes that the population may now be about 10,000-about 6,800 Moslems, 850 Greek Catholics, 750 Maronites, 150 Greeks, and 300 Jews. It exports tobacco, oil, fruit, and silk, but the amount of exports is small.

Tyre was situated about 20 miles south of Sidon. It was built partly on a small island about 70 paces from the shore, and partly on the mainland. It was a city of great extent and splendor, and extensive commerce. It abounded in luxury and wickedness. It was often besieged. It held out against Shalmaneser five years, and was taken by Nebuchadnezzar after a siege of "thirteen" years. It was afterward rebuilt, and was at length taken by Alexander the Great, after a most obstinate siege of five months. There are no signs now of the ancient city. It is the residence only of a few miserable fishermen, and contains, amid the ruins of its former magnificence, only a few huts. Thus was fulfilled the prophecy of Ezekiel: "Thou shalt be built no more; though thou be sought for, yet shalt thou never be found again" (Ezek 26:21). For a description of Tyre as it was formerly and as it is now, see the notes at Isa 23.

[In sackcloth and ashes] Sackcloth was a coarse cloth, like canvas, used for the dress of the poor, and for the more common articles of domestic economy. It was worn also as a sign of mourning. The Jews also frequently threw ashes on their heads as expressive of grief, Job 1:21; 2:12; Jer 6:26. The meaning is, that they would have repented with "expressions of deep sorrow." Like Nineveh, they would have seen their guilt and danger, and would have turned from their iniquities. "Heathen" cities would have received him better than the cities of the Jews, his native land.

### **Matthew 11:23**

And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

[And thou, Capernaum] See the notes at Matt 4:13.

[Which art exalted to heaven] This is an expression used to denote great privileges. He meant that they were especially favored with instruction. The city was prosperous. It was signally favored by its wealth. Most of all, it was signally favored by the presence, the preaching, and the miracles of the Lord Jesus Christ. Here he spent a large portion of his time in the early part of his ministry, and in Capernaum and its neighborhood he performed his chief miracles.

[Shalt be brought down to hell] This does not mean that all the people would go to hell, but that the city which had flourished so prosperously would lose its prosperity, and occupy the "lowest place" among cities. The word "hell" is used here, not to denote a place of punishment in the future world, but a state of "desolation and destructions." It stands in contrast with the word "heaven." As their being exalted to heaven did not mean that the "people" would all be saved or dwell in heaven, so their being brought down to "hell" refers to the desolation of the "city." Their privileges, honors, wealth, etc., would be taken

away, and they would sink as low among cities as they had been before exalted. This has been strictly fulfilled. In the wars between the Jews and the Romans, Chorazin, Bethsaida, Capernaum, etc., were so completely desolated that it is difficult to determine their former situation. See the notes at Matt 4:13. It is not to be denied, also, that he threatened future punishment on those who rejected him. The truth inculcated is, that those who are especially favored will be punished accordingly if they abuse their privileges.

[If the mighty works ... had been done in Sodom] See the notes at Matt 10:15. Sodom was destroyed on account of its great wickedness. Christ says if his miracles had been performed THERE, they would have repented, and consequently the city would not have been destroyed. As it was, it would be better for Sodom in the day of judgment than for Capernaum, for its inhabitants would not be called to answer for the abuse of so great privileges.

(from Barnes' Notes, Electronic Database. Copyright (c) 1997 by Biblosft)

#### **4 Invitation to Find Rest In Christ**

*MAT 11:25 At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. 26 Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in thy sight. 27 All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him. 28 Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. 29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. 30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.*

Christianity is a living faith of the revealed God. What most people cannot comprehend is that no man can want God, know God or even seek God unless God initiates the process. In all other religions, the process is initiated by the individual.

Secondly, to be free of one yoke is not to be free of any yoke. We may not want the yoke of our spouse or parents, but when we throw off that yoke, we have to take on the yoke of law, the boss, sin or some other yoke. When we take on the yoke of Christ (meaning His law and His statutes) we will have the lightest yoke of all. It will give us rest of soul. (mind, emotions and will). We will cease to struggle in our wills, our minds and our emotions with what is right and workable. He will give us that direction and then comes peace.

#### **d. Anointing of Jesus' Feet.**

*LUK 7:36 And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. 37 And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, 38 And stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment. 39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.*

## **Jesus answers with a parable.**

*Luk 7:40 And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. 41 There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. 42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most? 43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. 44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. 45 Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet. 46 My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. 47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little. 48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. 49 And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also? 50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.*

Jesus ate with Pharisees as well as the poor. A Woman of the city (streets) Prostitute came in and with Tears, washed Jesus's feet and

Dried them with her hair. She then Anointed His feet with ointment (perfume).

The Pharisee questioned Jesus being a prophet, he would know the type of woman.

Jesus answers them by explaining that they had given him no kisses, no washing or anointing of feet. Yet, this woman had not ceased to kiss his feet.

The reason was not lude sexual love, but her recognition of who He was. She was a great sinner and received forgiveness. She showed much appreciation,

These Pharisees were self righteous. They did not feel the need for forgiveness and therefore had no gratitude.

Jesus recognizing her faith told her to go in peace, her faith had saved her. He did not say she got eternal life or was redeemed by her faith. She would be redeemed and have eternal life through the atoning blood of Christ on the cross and carried to heaven.

The faith delivered her from a life of sin that saved her life in this world.

The word saved here is not a reference to redemption and or eternal life. Those who are of the elect or God's Israel have been redeemed by the Blood of Christ and have been given eternal life by the entrance of the Holy Spirit into their spirits.

Many of the redeemed and many of those outside of the elect obtain salvation. Many do not. This woman, because of her Adamic nature and her lack of light from the religious leaders of Judah allowed sin to take over her life. She was a prostitute as a result of this sin captivity.

When she came to know Christ, she believed, repented and was delivered from the sin of prostitution. She, her life, was saved. She was rescued. That is what the word *ōsavedö* means. She was redeemed by the death of Christ and later received the Holy Spirit when He came on Pentecost.

## **e. Second Tour of Galilee**

*LUK 8:1 And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him, 2 And certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, 3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.*

### **6. TEACHING AT THE SEA OF GALILEE**

#### **A. Warnings To Scribes and Pharisees**

##### **1. Accused of Madness**

*MAR 3:20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. 21 And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.*

Jesus' friends thought He was nuts because he was consumed with his mission and passion for the ministry. When someone gets burning for any passion, friends think he is nuts. But every great mission in life is first fired by a passion for something.

Missing meals to do your passion is not unusual to great leaders. Only those who tend to fail in life think more of food and drink for the body than for the mission.

##### **2. Heals the demonic**

*MAT 12:22 Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw. 23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David? 24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. 25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: 26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? 27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges. 28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. 29 Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house. ~The Unpardonable Sin 30 He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.*

The Israelites standing around recognized that Jesus must be the promised son of David, the



Messiah, since he was able to do these miracles.

The Pharisees, many being of Kainite/Edomite blood, were unable to acknowledge that Jesus was the Christ. Therefore, they began to explain that Jesus was using the powers of Satan or Beelzebub to do these miracles.

### **3. Unpardonable Sin**

*MAT 12:31 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. 32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. 33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit. 34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. 35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. 36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. 37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.*

*MAR 3:28 Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme: 29 But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation. 30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.*

Many ask what the unpardonable sin is. It is the revelation of your spirit being perverse or absent due to being a part of the cursed people. This is evidenced most acutely by attributing the works of God to the power of Satan or demons.

When the Pharisees attributed the casting out of Demons by Jesus as Him using the powers of Satan, this was evidence of their un-savable spirit.

Today, it is the press, and the Jewish leaders that do such things. They try to make the people believe that preachers of the truth are really demonic. This further confirms their unredeemable position and condition. In order to understand the mind set of the cursed people of the earth (not racially distinguishable in all cases) reverse terminology. If our God is Jehovah, then our God would be their Satan. Our Satan would be their god.

So, when the cursed people talk about their god, they are probably talking about our Satan. In essence, the unpardonable sin is being of the cursed seed.

### **Trees, roots and fruit.**

Jesus makes sure we understand that there is a people that are of the wrong seed. He uses the analogy of the tree. A good tree has good fruit. A Bad Tree has bad fruit. You cannot convert a bad tree to a good tree.

This is very much in line with the Bible's use of sheep and goats.

Sheep are the children of God. Goats are the children of Satan. You cannot convert goats to



sheep.

### ***B. Christ's True Kindred***

*MAT 12:46 While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him. 47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. 48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? 49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! 50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.*

*MAR 3:31 There came then his brethren and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him. 32 And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee. 33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren? 34 And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! 35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.*

*LUK 8:19 Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press. 20 And it was told him by certain which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee. 21 And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.*

Jesus Christ was not denying his relationship to his paternal family. He was in fact enlarging His earthly family. He was kinsman redeemer to all Israel, all Adamites. His intention was to identify His whole family. There are two verses that make this significant.

*AMO 3:2 You only have I known of all the families of the earth: therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities.*

*HEB 2:14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil; 15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. 16 For verily he took not on him the nature of angels; but he took on him the seed of Abraham. 17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.*

If the Bible teaches anything, it teaches that the Bible, its God, its people and its message is racially exclusive. The one thing the Canaanite enemy cannot stand is a God and people who chooses certain people exclusively.

It is always the same. People who are excluded are jealous and down on those who are included. The only difference is that we, the Israel people of God were not included because of any merit on our part. And those who were excluded are cursed of God and doomed to destruction. Their best tactic is to try and equalize everyone in every are, thereby causing the elect people to destroy themselves, even if it is in ignorance.

***HOS 4:6 My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children.***

Ignorance is lack of knowledge and lack of knowledge is evidence that parents have failed to give their children the information they need.

We will have a special section on the history and destiny of the Canaanites later.

### ***C. TO THE CROWDS BY THE SEA***

#### ***The parables***

The parables are of special importance and were the prime information in my understanding of the Scriptures and who we are in relationship to God. I have more schooling than I would like to talk about, but most of the truths that I have learned in the last 15 years were not learned in the college and seminaries. It is unfortunate that so many ministers are unlearned and not aware they are unlearned.

I feel sorry for many of them because I was in the same boat at one time. They are sincere and work hard following the formula and theology they were taught, but keep failing.

If a minister is sincere, his motivation for ministry is to bring people to Christ, see their lives change from sin to holiness and their families healed, their children raised to avoid the pitfalls of sin and the church to grow in size, harmony and spirituality.

Since this is the purpose of preaching and teaching the Word of God, looking at the world, we would all agree that it has failed in these last days. The churches may be larger, but they are filled with animosity, corruption, sin and failure. The home is devastated and decimated. The individual makes a profession, is baptized and continues on in his sin and merry way. Failure, failure, failure! I was there. I know the feeling. Only after I understood who we are and what our mission Scripturally is, did I begin to have renewed hope.

The parables are God's message of hope in a long period of time He called the "Kingdom of Heaven". I was taught that the Apostles were looking for the immanent return of Christ. They were not. They understood the parables to refer to Judah and Israel, not to some unknown gentile people unrelated to Adam/Israel, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.

Some rules in understanding the parables.

1. Let the Lord interpret as much as possible
2. Remember that the time frame is covering a long period of time.
3. Remember that the parables are not dispensational.
4. The parables apply to the people of God (Adam/Israel) not some unrelated church.
5. If you want more on the parables, order my book, The Parables

#### ***1. Parable of The Sower***

***MAT 13:1 The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side. 2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. 3 And he spake many things unto them in parables,***

saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; 4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: 5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: 6 And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. 7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: 8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. 9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

### **Explination**

*Mat 13:10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables? 11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. 12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath. 13 Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. 14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive: 15 For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. 16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. 17 For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.*

### **Explained**

*Mat 13:18 Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower. 19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side. 20 But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; 21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended. 22 He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful. 23 But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.*

*MAR 4:1 And he began again to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea; and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land. 2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine, 3 Harken; Behold, there went out a sower to sow: 4 And it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up. 5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth: 6 But when the sun was up, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away. 7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and*

*choked it, and it yielded no fruit. 8 And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and increased; and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred. 9 And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.*

*Mar 4:10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve asked of him the parable. 11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables: 12 That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them.*

*Mar 4:13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will ye know all parables? 14 The sower soweth the word. 15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts. 16 And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness; 17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended. 18 And these are they which are sown among thorns; such as hear the word, 19 And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. 20 And these are they which are sown on good ground; such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some an hundred.*

*LUK 8:4 And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable: 5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. 6 And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. 7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. 8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundredfold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.*

*Luk 8:9 And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be? 10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to others in parables; that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand.*

*Luk 8:11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. 12 Those by the way side are they that hear; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved. 13 They on the rock are they, which, when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away. 14 And that which fell among thorns are they, which, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection. 15 But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience*

This parable is primary in understanding all the parables. In fact, mark quotes the Lord as saying, *“If you cannot understand this parable, how will you understand the rest of my parables?”*

The first problem with which Jesus had to deal was why He spoke in parables in the first place. Jesus quickly made it plain that there was a certain group of people He did not want to understand the truths He was speaking.

The Lord interprets this one as well as some others. First of all, this parable is not so much about the sower as the ground to receive the seed over the next hundreds and thousands of years.

Jesus Christ knew that He would be leaving for an extended length of time. He knew that as generations came and went, that the indwelling Holy Spirit and the written Word would be the means of passing on the truths of the Gospel and the means of building and maintaining hope in the hearts of the believers.

Jesus Christ had to help His Disciples understand that while the current age was coming to an end, the new age, beginnings after the fall of Jerusalem and the temple, would continue for an extended and unspecified amount of time.

Most of the New testament writings would deal with the time up to the end of and the great tribulation during the end of the Old covenant age from the crucifixion of Christ to the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 ad. Most of the Scriptures speaking of the end time, the last days, etc in the New testament speak of the 40 years from Christ to Titus.

The parables is one of those teachings that Jesus gave to describe the time from 70 ad until the completion of the "times of the Gentiles" meaning the conversion, bringing into the covenant and regathering of all Israel into one nation of people and settling them in many countries.

God knew that His people would need some evidences to keep them on track. The parables do that.

The parable of the sower is a synopsis of the then future history of the Israel people, the church from ad 70 until this current day. We do not know how much longer the time will be, but there are some indications that this time is coming to an end.

This parable of the sower is explained by the Lord. The sower is not identified. The seed is the Word of God and the ground is the hearer.

The message of this parable is that believers would sow the Word of God to hearers. The command was to go to all the Adamic nations. Mat 28:19-20 Not all hearers would respond the same. Some would be "wayside hearers".

**Continued next Month**

Continued parable of the Sower:

The problem with the õwaysideö hearers is the foul, the wicked one preventing them from hearing and understanding the Word. The effect is that the Word is taken away.

The foul or birds come and take away the seed. These birds are defined by Matthew as, õthe wicked oneö. This is not Satan or the Devil. The word õwicked oneö is from the Greek word õponerosö derived from õponosö from the root word, õpenesö. It is translated the following ways in the New Testament:

Greek:	Count:	Translation:
4190	00052	EVIL
4190	00017	WICKED
4192	00002	PAIN
3993	00001	POOR
4190	00001	BAD
4190	00001	EVILS
4190	00001	LEWD
4190	00001	HARM
4190	00001	WICKEDNESS
4190	00001	MALICIOUS
4190	00001	GRIEVOUS
4192	00001	PAINS
Total	80	

Mark uses the word õdevilö from the Greek word õdiabolousö. Luke uses the word õSatanö from the Greek word õsatanasö.

Matthew speaks to the application of the words used by others. All of these words speak of the pain and toil of just making a living and surviving due to oppressive taxation, regulation and devaluation of the earned money. The enemy who controls these most of the time in this world and under most governments are the enemies who rejected Christ.

In other words, just as Pharaoh would not let the Israelites go serve God because he wanted them for slaves to build cities for the empire, so today, we , the children of the Israelites cannot be freed from the toils of labor by the enemy because the enemy wants our labor for building their one world empire. Because of this, many of God's people are not able to hear and understand the Word enough to actually allow the seed to germinate by the power of the Holy Spirit.

The next hearers were those with stony hearts, not yet opened by the Holy Spirit. Remember that God said He would give Israel a heart of flesh and remove the heart of stone. Until this is done by the Holy Spirit, and we have no idea when He will do this on an individual basis, the seed of the Word is not going to take hold. Our intercessory prayer life should be asking God to open the

spiritual hearts of His people to allow the planting of the Word (seed) causing them to be convicted of their sins and bring repentance and faith resulting in new life.

For believers to strive with people to pray a prayer for salvation when their heart has not yet been opened by the Holy is a grave miscarriage of truth. It is this kind of evangelism that has dominated the church now for 50 years and as a result our churches are filled with people who do not know God, whose lives have not changed and who have not repented of and forsaken their sins.

These people actually make professions of faith, but stand for nothing. When controversy, oppression or any kind of unpleasant dealings with government, others or sin come along, they will oppose the pastor or leave the church. Their faith is not substantive.

The next hearers are ðthorny hearersö. These receive the Word, but are soon choked out by the thorns, the cares of the world. In this case, it is not the toil of labor that prevents the hearer from being productive, it is the pleasures and even good things in life that prevent production for God. This could be Boy Scouts, clubs, sports, you name it. Anything which significantly detracts your mind, attention and concentration from the Word is actually bad for your spiritual life.

Then there is the good ground hearer. He receives the Word and produces a harvest. But even here, God knows that each person is different. Some produce 30 fold, some 60 fold and some 100 fold.

What is this fruit that a believer produces?

FRUIT (BEAR), FRUITFUL, UNFRUITFUL

"the fruit of the Spirit," Gal 5:22, the singular form suggesting the unity of the character of the Lord as reproduced in them, namely, "love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, meekness, temperance," all in contrast with the confused and often mutually antagonistic "works of the flesh."

(from Vine's Expository Dictionary of Biblical Words, Copyright (c)1985, Thomas Nelson Publishers)

Modern day churches and pastors see all passages leading to soul winning and bringing people to Christ (Their church). While this is a legitimate work, this kind of limited interpretation of the Scriptures brings about abuses. Many wind up trying to get people to pray a prayer or join the church believing that this alone is evidence of faith.

The truth is, that the only kind of fruit that I can find in *the* Bible other than actual fruit we eat, is spiritual fruit. This fruit is produced by God the Holy Spirit within us. People who produce fruit are having fruit produced in them by the Spirit.

These fruit producing people may produce this fruit in varying degrees, but they don't produce the opposite which is the fruit of the flesh. These are listed as:

**GAL 5:19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery (seed mixing), fornication (all other sexual violations of the law), uncleanness (ceremonially), lasciviousness (sin without control, no discipline), 20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21 Envyings, murders,**

**drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.**

People who are filled with the Spirit and producing fruit, do not have to force a witness and testimony, they are a testimony.

This parable is God's way of saying to His beloved people, if you begin to doubt my return, you think I am delaying it or you wonder if something is off track, just look around. If the gospel is still producing people who are loving, joyful, enduring, longsuffering, kind, god and peaceful in troubled times, be assured that this is what will happen until I come again. This is the time of the kingdom of heaven. This is the kingdom of heaven in action.

## ***2. Parable of the Seed Growing without Man's Help***

**MAR 4:26 And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground;**

**27 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.**

**28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.**

**29 But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.**

This parable is never discussed by preachers. At least in 45 years of preaching, I have not heard of any preacher explaining this parable. Many feel that it is part of the parable of the sower. But I feel differently.

This parable is not mentioned by any other writer than Mark.

This parable is an explanation that it is a privilege to be a sower. Jesus told Peter 4 times to go and feed His sheep. There is far too much guilt laid on the believer about his responsibility to cause growth and harvest. We are to sow, but once the sowing is done, the germination, the growth and the harvest are the Lord's.

If we refuse to be a part of this process, God will do it without us. If we want to be partners with God, He will allow us to do so.

The kingdom seed was planted by Christ 2000 years ago. The kingdom will come to fruition whether we like it or not, whether we aid and assist or hinder. God's promises and covenants are not dependant upon the frailties of man.

However, our position and responsibilities in the kingdom will be determined by our faithfulness to obey God

## ***3. Parable of the Tares***



**MAT 13:24** Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: **25** But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. **26** But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. **27** So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? **28** He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? **29** But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. **30** Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

**MAT 13:36** Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. **37** He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; **38** The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; **39** The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. **40** As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. **41** The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; **42** And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. **43** Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

### **Wheat and the Tares**

Jesus Himself explains this Himself.

The sower of the good seed is Christ, the field is the world. The good seed is Israel, the children of the kingdom. The seed was sown by Dispersion of Israel throughout the 5 world power of nations; Assyria, Babylon, Medes/Persians, Greeks & Romans.

The word church had not been used to this point. The tares are the children of the wicked one; not the unsaved, not the unbelieving, these are actual children just like the children of the kingdom. They were sown by the devil, the enemy, the cursed seed, sown in the night of Israel dispersion among the field/nations. May have been when Judah captured Edom.

The wicked children were not recognized until the fruit of the good seed was formed. That would have been as Israel moved North and West and formed new nations/countries. The wicked seed showed up among them taking power and wealth where possible.

The servants want to get rid of these tares. God says they have to stay until harvest. The harvest will be when the reaper puts in the sickle to gather the grapes of the vine of the earth at the return of Christ. The harvest is the end of the world (age). The reapers are the angels. The Tares will be gathered out of the kingdom by the angels at the end of the age

The first gathering happened in 70 AD and I believe that it is happening in Middle East ōIsraeliö today and there will be a major meeting and gathering in that land soon.

The tares shall be cast into the fire, lake of fire. Once the tares are removed, the righteous will shine forth

### ***THE RIGHTEOUS SHALL SHINE FORTH***

Daniel describes what happened in 70 ad, but there is to be another time.

**DAN 12:1** And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book. **2** And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt. **3** And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.

**ISA 60:1** Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the LORD is risen upon thee. **2** For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon thee, and his glory shall be seen upon thee. **3** And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising. **4** Lift up thine eyes round about, and see: all they gather themselves together, they come to thee: thy sons shall come from far, and thy daughters shall be nursed at thy side. **5** Then thou shalt see, and flow together, and thine heart shall fear, and be enlarged; because the abundance of the sea shall be converted unto thee, the forces of the Gentiles shall come unto thee. **6** The multitude of camels shall cover thee, the dromedaries of Midian and Ephah; all they from Sheba shall come: they shall bring gold and incense; and they shall shew forth the praises of the LORD. **7** All the flocks of Kedar shall be gathered together unto thee, the rams of Nebaioth shall minister unto thee: they shall come up with acceptance on mine altar, and I will glorify the house of my glory. **8** Who are these that fly as a cloud, and as the doves to their windows? **9** Surely the isles shall wait for me, and the ships of Tarshish first, to bring thy sons from far, their silver and their gold with them, unto the name of the LORD thy God, and to the Holy One of Israel, because he hath glorified thee. **10** And the sons of strangers shall build up thy walls, and their kings shall minister unto thee: for in my wrath I smote thee, but in my favour have I had mercy on thee. **11** Therefore thy gates shall be open continually; they shall not be shut day nor night; that men may bring unto thee the forces of the Gentiles, and that their kings may be brought. **12** For the nation and kingdom that will not serve thee shall perish; yea, those nations shall be utterly wasted. **13** The glory of Lebanon shall come unto thee, the fir tree, the pine tree, and the box together, to beautify the place of my sanctuary; and I will make the place of my feet glorious. **14** The sons also of them that afflicted thee shall come bending unto thee; and all they that despised thee shall bow themselves down at the soles of thy feet; and they shall call thee; The city of the LORD, The Zion of the Holy One of Israel. **15** Whereas thou hast been forsaken and hated, so that no man went through thee, I will make thee an eternal excellency, a joy of many generations. **16** Thou shalt also suck the milk of the Gentiles,

and shalt suck the breast of kings: and thou shalt know that I the LORD am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer, the mighty One of Jacob. 17 For brass I will bring gold, and for iron I will bring silver, and for wood brass, and for stones iron: I will also make thy officers peace, and thine exactors righteousness. 18 Violence shall no more be heard in thy land, wasting nor destruction within thy borders; but thou shalt call thy walls Salvation, and thy gates Praise. 19 The sun shall be no more thy light by day; neither for brightness shall the moon give light unto thee: but the LORD shall be unto thee an everlasting light, and thy God thy glory. 20 Thy sun shall no more go down; neither shall thy moon withdraw itself: for the LORD shall be thine everlasting light, and the days of thy mourning shall be ended. 21 Thy people also shall be all righteous: they shall inherit the land for ever, the branch of my planting, the work of my hands, that I may be glorified. 22 A little one shall become a thousand, and a small one a strong nation: I the LORD will hasten it in his time.

The parables of the kingdom speak of the time from Christ until the end of the age.

#### ***4. Parable of the Mustard Seed***

**MAT 13:31** Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: 32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

~Parable of the Mustard Seed **MAR 4:30** And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it? 31 It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth: 32 But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

The Kingdom is like a mustard seed. Christ is the man in this parable that sowed the mustard seed of the kingdom. The mustard seed is a very small seed.

When God planted the kingdom it consisted only of Abraham, Sarah and Isaac. At Mt Sinai, it was still only about 2-3 million people, not as many people as a small city.

But this kingdom, after Christ, has grown to fulfill the promises made to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. They would be many countries, covering much of the earth and as many children as the sand of the seas and the stars of the heavens. The kingdom has grown to be the greatest tree; Trees are nations.

One problem would be that the birds would come to rest in its branches. These birds are wicked ones, the same as the seed of the tares.

Come to lodge (dwell) in branches.

It started in Israel occupation of Edom, they are with us today in our branches of government, finance, religion, economics, Law and education.

## ***5. Parable of the Leaven***

**MAT 13:33** Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

What is the leaven? Leaven is traditionally seen in scripture as a sign of evil. But the Kingdom of Heaven is not evil. The words of Jesus plainly say that the Kingdom is like leaven. He surely means that the Kingdom will grow and enlarge in the same manner as leaven expands.

Who is the woman? Many have asked and the only answer I have seen from the modern church theology is that the woman represents Jezebel who planted evil doctrine in the church and the Word.

But as we have seen, the kingdom is the leaven that got planted and that is not evil.

I believe that you have to interpret this parable as a unit. Leaven is used by women who make bread. They mix the leaven in a small batch of meal and it grows from there.

This was what happened to the kingdom. It got planted in the world and has grown to become the largest part of the world in wealth, power and righteousness.

The Holy Spirit is the active yeast or leaven that was planted within the kingdom to give it life and power.

The age of the Holy Spirit will last until the times of the gentiles be come and Christ returns, until the whole, all His people are empowered by the Spirit.

## ***6. Parable of Hidden Treasurer***

**MAT 13:44** Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

### ***Peculiar Treasure***

**EXO 19:5** Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine:

**PSA 135:4** For the LORD hath chosen Jacob unto himself, and Israel for his peculiar treasure.

**2CO 4:7** But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

**DEU 14:2** For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy God, and the LORD hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto himself, above all the nations that are upon the earth.

**DEU 26:18** And the LORD hath avouched thee this day to be his peculiar people, as he hath promised thee, and that thou shouldest keep all his commandments;

TIT 2:14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

1PE 2:9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light;

There is no doubt in my mind that Israel was that treasure that God hid in the earth when He dispersed them. Christ dies for the whole world that He might redeem and save His treasure. The world will not be part of Israel, but it will reap benefits through redeemed Adam/Israel.

## ***7. Parable of Pearl of Great Price***

MAT 13:45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: 46 Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

REV 21:21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

The only good thing about a pearl in the Bible is that which is said in Revelation as reference to the gates to the New Jerusalem. The New Jerusalem is that part of redeemed Israel which is the Bride, the New Jerusalem. The gates to New Jerusalem is Christ. There are 12 gates representing the 12 tribes of Israel.

Therefore, God the merchant man found Christ an acceptable sacrifice, a pearl (made in suffering), so God gave all in order to make a door for Israel.

Remember that these parables were given before Christ died.

## ***8. Parable of the Net***

MAT 13:47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: 48 Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. 49 So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, 50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

The net is the Gospel net, he preaching of the gospel. The net was thrown into the sea. The preaching of the gospel is to the sea of people. The result was, is and has been, that people of all sorts have been gathered into the boat by the net.

At first, the net brought in the sons of God and the people of His son, Adam. But as we near the end of the age, the net less and less finds the people of God and more and more finds the fish of those not qualified. But, the fishers, the preachers keep casting out the net and taking all fishes into the boat.

When God determines the fishing over, His angels will come and sort out those who will be kept

and those who will be returned to the sea or the ground or burned.

Jesus interprets this parable as He did the Tares. He does not want there to be any mistakes of understanding.

Angels gather together all and sever the wicked ( not just unbelieving) from among the good fish, the kingdom fish.

The bad fish cast into the furnace of fire, wailing and gnashing of teeth.

These accursed seed were first cast into that furnace in 70 ad, they have been persecuted until recent years.

## ***6. Conclusions***

MAT 13:34 All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them: 35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

MAR 4:33 And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able to hear it. 34 But without a parable spake he not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

Jesus spake these parable to fill in the unknown. The unknown part in Scripture called Mystery. He was telling His disciples, look, you expect the full kingdom now, I am telling you that the spiritual kingdom has to come first; then the physical.

Here is how it works

I sow the kingdom,, the Kingdom sows the Gospel. The kingdom will grow and become the dominant power in the world. This will happen because My Spirit will make the kingdom like leaven. You are the great pearl for which I have come to by with my blood and buy back the field, the world. At the end, I will come and my angels. They will sort out the wicked and unqualified and cleanse the kingdom. Then you will be changed, glorified and reign with me.

## ***5. The Householder***

MAT 13:51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.

MAT 13:52 Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

Jesus tells His disciples that they are to use these truths for ministry at any and all appropriate times.

## **Jesus Revisits Nazareth**

MAT 13:53 And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

## **7. MIRACLES BY THE SEA**

### **a. Jesus Stills the Tempest Discipleship Tested**

MAT 8:18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

MAT 8:19 And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

MAT 8:20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

MAT 8:21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

MAT 8:22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead.

MAT 8:23 And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him.

MAT 8:24 And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep.

MAT 8:25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish.

MAT 8:26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm.

MAT 8:27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!

### **Jesus Stills the Sea**

MAR 4:35 And the same day, when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the other side. 36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship. And there were also with him other little ships. 37 And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full. 38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish? 39 And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm. 40 And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearful? how is it that ye have no faith? 41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

### **Jesus Stills the Sea**

LUK 8:22 Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they launched forth.

LUK 8:23 But as they sailed he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake;

and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardy.

LUK 8:24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

LUK 8:25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this! for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

Three of the four Gospels tell this story. The purpose of course is to prove Christ is the promised Messiah by showing his power over nature. By secondary truth, it also shows that Christ had spent much time on a boat in rough waters. We discussed this in the 18 missing years of Christ's life.

## **b. The Demoniacs**

### **Jesus Casts Out Demons**

MAT 8:28 And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way.

MAT 8:29 And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

MAT 8:30 And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding.

MAT 8:31 So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

MAT 8:32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

MAT 8:33 And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

MAT 8:34 And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

### **The Gerasene Demoniac**

MAR 5:1 And they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes.

MAR 5:2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit,

MAR 5:3 Who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains:

MAR 5:4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

MAR 5:5 And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones.

MAR 5:6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him,

MAR 5:7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

MAR 5:8 For he said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit.



MAR 5:9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

MAR 5:10 And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country.

MAR 5:11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding.

MAR 5:12 And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

MAR 5:13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand;) and were choked in the sea.

MAR 5:14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

MAR 5:15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

MAR 5:16 And they that saw it told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine.

MAR 5:17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

MAR 5:18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devil prayed him that he might be with him.

MAR 5:19 Howbeit Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

MAR 5:20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel.

### **The Demoniac Cured**

LUK 8:26 And they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee.

LUK 8:27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man, which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombs.

LUK 8:28 When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee, torment me not.

LUK 8:29 (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.)

LUK 8:30 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entered into him.

LUK 8:31 And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

LUK 8:32 And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them.

LUK 8:33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

LUK 8:34 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the country.

LUK 8:35 Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

LUK 8:36 They also which saw it told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was healed.

LUK 8:37 Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

LUK 8:38 Now the man out of whom the devils were departed besought him that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away, saying,

LUK 8:39 Return to thine own house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city how great things Jesus had done unto him.

## **DEMONS**

### **SOME THINGS WE NEED TO KNOW ABOUT DEMONS**

1. It is wrong for God's people to dwell on them. The Bible only refers to them to explain the cause of some sufferings in the time of Christ and his power over them.
2. Demons is the proper name for devil or devils in most New Testament references.
3. Demons are under the control of Satan or the devil or the power and order of the evil kingdom of opposition to Christ
4. Demons are not autonomous or free or all powerful.
5. When Satan is restrained all that are under HIM ARE RESTRAINED.
6. Demons do not have access to Christians unless Christians willingly go into their territory.

#### **DEMON**

**(d) In the New Testament the range of activities attributed to demons is greatly restricted. According to Babylonian ideas: "These demons were everywhere; they lurked in every corner, watching for their prey. The city streets knew their malevolent presence, the rivers, the seas, the tops of mountains; they appeared sometimes as serpents gliding noiselessly upon their victims, as birds horrid of mien flying resistlessly to destroy or afflict, as beings in human forms, grotesque, malformed, awe-inspiring through their hideousness. To these demons all sorts of misfortune were ascribed-a toothache; a headache, a broken bone, a raging fever, an outburst of anger, of jealousy, of incomprehensible disease" (Rogers, op. cit., 145). In the extra-canonical Jewish sources the same exuberance of fancy appears in attributing all kinds of ills of mind and body to innumerable, swarming hosts of demons lying in wait for men and besieging them with attacks and ills of all descriptions. Of this affluence of morbid fancy there is no hint in the New Testament.**

**(from International Standard Bible Encyclopaedia, Electronic Database Copyright (c)1996 by Biblesoft)**

7. In the time of Christ, Satan and his demons were loose and did afflict the Israel of God who had not yet received the indwelling Spirit of God.
8. Christ bound Satan and his demons while He was here and that remained until recent decades. Rev 20:7

9. Satan and his demons have been loosed since about 1776 (Author's conclusion)

10. We are now seeing the cultural presence of demons as in the days of Christ.

Recognizing demonic activity

### **Baal worship**

Eroticism, pornography

Undisciplined sex, racial mixing, unmarried, multiple partners, sodomy

Sacrifice of the young, aborticide, incest, Ritual killing

### **Wild and violent activity,**

murder, body mutilation rings, studs cuttings, coloring of body parts (Tattoos)

### **Drugs, alcohol,**

### **Abusive behavior against loved family members.**

### **A spirit of rebellion against leaders in the church, school, home, government, etc.**

### **Nakedness and destructive dress**

## **THE CURE**

The cure for demon activity and influence in one's life requires

1. recognition
2. Acknowledgement
3. Repentance of territory

Satan and demons can only inflict you if you travel in their territory willingly  
accepting the culture

television

Music

School

Some churches

Friends in their territory

Pornography

Drugs

Alcohol

Adultery and sodomy

Other cultures

The occult

Experimenting with other cultures religions

Why do you not see evidence of demons in the Amish and Mennonites?

They are separated from these things.

The Gadareen was naked, wild, violent, destructive

After he was cleansed, he was sane, calm, dressed, non violent.

It must be remembered that demonic activity will be seen most prominent in people who do not and cannot have the indwelling spirit of God. (People outside the Race of God)

The Accursed seed line of Canaanites and Edomites

And those of non Adamic races or mixed races.

Adamites who mix with other races.

Adamites must stay out of demonic territory.

The only guaranteed protection today from demons is the have the indwelling spirit and stay out of their territory.

(Cont next Month)

### **c. Raising of Jairus Daughter and Healing of Afflicted Women**

**MAT 9:18 While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.**

**MAT 9:19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.**

**(Hem of the Garment)**

**MAT 9:23 And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,**

**MAT 9:24 He said unto them, Give place: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.**

**MAT 9:25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.**

**MAT 9:26 And the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.**

Another power demonstration to prove His Messiahship.

### **Raising Jairus' Daughter**

#### **Mark's Account**

**MAR 5:21 And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him: and he was nigh unto the sea.**

**22 And, behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet,**

**23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death: I pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed; and she shall live.**

**And Jesus went with him; and much people followed him, and thronged him.**

**(Issue of Blood)**

**MAR 5:35** While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's house certain which said, Thy daughter is dead: why troublest thou the Master any further?

**MAR 5:36** As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.

**MAR 5:37** And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

**MAR 5:38** And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

**MAR 5:39** And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

**MAR 5:40** And they laughed him to scorn. But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying.

**41** And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, arise.

**42** And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment.

**43** And he charged them straitly that no man should know it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

**Luke**  
**on Jairus Daughter**

**LUK 8:40** And it came to pass, that, when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him: for they were all waiting for him.

**LUK 8:41** And, behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him that he would come into his house:

**LUK 8:42** For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying. But as he went the people thronged him.

**(Issue of Blood))**

**LUK 8:49** While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master.

**LUK 8:50** But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole.

**LUK 8:51** And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

**LUK 8:52** And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth.

**LUK 8:53** And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

**LUK 8:54** And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

**LUK 8:55** And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

**LUK 8:56** And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

## Hem of the Garment

**MAT 9:20 And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment:**

**MAT 9:21 For she said within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.**

**MAT 9:22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour.**

There are three accounts in three of the four Gospels about Christ being asked by Jaiors to heal his only daughter of 12 who was either dead or about to died. All agree that she was indeed dead by the time Christ arrived at the home.

Actually, Jesus did not heal Jairusø daughter, but allowed her to die so He could illustrate His deity and power over death. Jesus told the occupants of the home that the girl was sleeping. They laughed.

Only Christ Himself entered the room where the girl lay and raised her from the dead. He brought her out to greet her father and mother.

Jairus was a ruler in the synagogue in Capernaum, a man of great faith in Christ. He approached Jesus.

Each Gospel records another miracle Jesus performed as He was on his way to the home of Jairus. A woman who had an issue of blood (hemorrhage) believed that if she could just touch Christø garments, she would be healed.

As she touched His garment, Jesus stopped suddenly and said that someone had touched Him. His Disciples were puzzled because there were people all around H9im touching Him.

The difference was that someone of faith touched Him and power was released from Him to her, healing her.

The point here is that true faith brings unity with God through Christ releasing His power. Faith activates the power of God.

### **Mark's version and the Hem of the garment**

**MAR 5:21 And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him: and he was nigh unto the sea.**

**MAR 5:22 And, behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet,**

**MAR 5:23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death: I pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed; and she shall live.**

**MAR 5:24 And Jesus went with him; and much people followed him, and thronged him.**

**MAR 5:25 And a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years,**

**MAR 5:26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,**

**MAR 5:27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his**

garment.

MAR 5:28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

MAR 5:29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

MAR 5:30 And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes?

MAR 5:31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

MAR 5:32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

MAR 5:33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

MAR 5:34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

Luke's account of Hem Healinng

LUK 8:43 And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any,

LUK 8:44 Came behind him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her issue of blood stanchèd.

LUK 8:45 And Jesus said, Who touched me? When all denied, Peter and they that were with him said, Master, the multitude throng thee and press thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

LUK 8:46 And Jesus said, Somebody hath touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me.

LUK 8:47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

LUK 8:48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace.

The two blind men and the demoniac

MAT 9:27 And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou son of David, have mercy on us.

MAT 9:28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord.

MAT 9:29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you.

MAT 9:30 And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

MAT 9:31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country.

This account shows the kind of faith needed and you get what you have faith to receive. The woman had faith to be healed if she touched the clothing of the Lord. These men had faith to be made able to see again.

### **Demoniac**

MAT 9:32 As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a

devil.

**MAT 9:33** And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.

**MAT 9:34** But the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils through the prince of the devils.

Later Christ calls this the sin against the Holy Spirit, the unpardonable sin.

## THIRD CIRCUIT

### Second rejection at Nazareth

**MAT 13:54** And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

**MAT 13:55** Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?

**MAT 13:56** And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things?

**MAT 13:57** And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house.

**MAT 13:58** And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief.

### MARK'S ACCOUNT

**MAR 6:1** And he went out from thence, and came into his own country; and his disciples follow him.

**MAR 6:2** And when the sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

**MAR 6:3** Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

**MAR 6:4** But Jesus, said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.

**MAR 6:5** And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.

**MAR 6:6** And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching.

Jesus was not recognized when he came home. He had been gone for 18 years. He told them He was the Messiah and they became offended. They did not try to do him bodily harm. This is the difference in Israelites and the Jews Accursed seed in Jerusalem. . The Edomite Jews tried to kill Him. These people wanted all the facts before judgment.

He pointed out that a prophet is not honored by his own neighbors from his home town.

## THIRD TOUR OF GALILEE

### Disciples Sent Forth.



**MAT 9:35** And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people.

**MAT 9:36** But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.

**MAT 9:37** Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few;

**MAT 9:38** Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

What did Jesus mean when he said the harvest is great and the laborers are few?

He meant that there were multitudes of people ready to hear the gospel of the kingdom and coming messiah. He needed more people to tell the story.

The opposite is true today. Few want to hear the demands of the Gospel. They want to hear of a loving forgiving Jesus, but not of the needed repentance duties and responsibilities.

### **The Twelve Disciples; Instructions for Service**

**MAT 10:1** And when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

**MAT 10:2** Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother;

**MAT 10:3** Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James the son of Alphaeus, and Lebbaeus, whose surname was Thaddaeus;

**MAT 10:4** Simon the Canaanite, (Cananaean=Zelot) and Judas Iscariot (Edomite), who also betrayed him.

### **MARK'S ACCOUNT**

The Twelve Sent Out

**MAR 6:7** And he called unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two; and gave them power over unclean spirits;

### **LUKE'S ACCOUNT**

Ministry of the Twelve

**LUK 9:1** Then he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.

**LUK 9:2** And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

## INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE JOURNEY

**MAT 10:5** These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles (ethnos=foreign races), and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not:

**MAT 10:6** But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. (The lost sheep are called Gentiles in the modern Bible) But, the Apostles and Disciples of that time knew who and where the scattered Israelites were among the Nations. They were to go to them and preach the Gospel.

**MAT 10:7** And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.

**MAT 10:8** Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

An old preacher one time said that Jesus sent his Apostles to heal the dead and raise the devil

**MAT 10:9** Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses,

**MAT 10:10** Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the workman is worthy of his meat.

**MAT 10:11** And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go thence.

**MAT 10:12** And when ye come into an house, salute it.

**MAT 10:13** And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

**MAT 10:14** And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet.

**MAT 10:15** Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.

We have a responsibility to tell the gospel or good news of the redemption of God's people, but we are not responsible for their listening, hearing or repenting. That is the responsibility of the Holy Spirit.

The church today has been filled with bad fruit, the wrong fruit and no fruit because the church has used a forced universal soul winning approach to evangelism to add members. As the parable of the fish net says, fish of all sorts, good and bad are being caught and they will eventually have to be separated at the end of the age.

## MARK

**MAR 6:8** And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only; no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse:

**MAR 6:9** But be shod with sandals; and not put on two coats.

**MAR 6:10** And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

**MAR 6:11** And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that

city.

## LUKE

**LUK 9:3 And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece.**

**LUK 9:4 And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.**

**LUK 9:5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.**

Jesus called twelve of his disciples for apostles. Disciples are learners, apostles are leaders and teachers with authority. This is the part that most Christians don't understand today. There is a call, an appointment by the Holy God of those He chooses to administer and oversee His sheep.

They are not chosen because they are perfect, but they have the authority of God to teach, discipline, and lead and heal, counsel and guide.

While these men were not perfect, they were qualified by Bible standards. We don't know all the reasons Jesus chose the men he chose, but he did not choose any women. The qualifications are given by Paul in letters to Timothy and Titus. We will study them in detail later.

This is one area of my pet peeves. Churches today treat pastors like dirt. Church members think that they can be judges condemning, firing and manipulating their salaries at will.

The pulpits today are filled in the most part by men & women who are forced to be hirelings in order to keep their jobs and feed their families. Their greatest talent is not the Bible, preaching, counseling or any other form of ministry, but they are forced to perfect the skill of political double talk to keep from offending those who can fire them and avoid every possible act of Biblical responsibility in the community because that would be controversial. To take a stand against sin requires offending the sinner and if they are members of the church they can go to another church where they will not have to listen to that kind of preaching. Preaching against sin, naming sin and condemning sin will almost surely offend government and school officials, since they commit a large portion of sin in our communities. This will not sit well, because if you do not have teachers and public officials in the church, you are nothing in the eyes of most.

If the people who responded to the apostles had treated them the way church members do today, the church would have failed before it got off the ground.

But the church was never a democracy. The pastor was the leader and no one got approved for preaching without the sanction of the pastor and elders.

Even membership was restrictive.

## PERSECUTION OF THE DISCIPLES

**MAT 10:16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise**

as serpents, and harmless as doves.

**MAT 10:17** But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues;

**MAT 10:18** And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

**MAT 10:19** But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.

**MAT 10:20** For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

**MAT 10:21** And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

**MAT 10:22** And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

**MAT 10:23** But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

**MAT 10:24** The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord.

**MAT 10:25** It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

**MAT 10:26** Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

**MAT 10:27** What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the housetops.

**MAT 10:28** And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

**MAT 10:29** Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

**MAT 10:30** But the very hairs of your head are all numbered.

**MAT 10:31** Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

**MAT 10:32** Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

**MAT 10:33** But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

### **The Meaning of Discipleship**

During this persecution, don't falter. Be strong and give testimony of your faith. If you are ashamed of Christ, then God will be ashamed of you.

Our need today is for those who have understanding and will testify to the authority of the Word of God and His Law in our life and society.

Remember that if they persecuted and killed Christ, we, His disciples are not better than He. To live a life in Christ without persecution is impossible.

God sees and knows everything. He sees their wickedness and He will see your faithfulness. It

will all be revealed in the judgment.

This is the first time he sent out His disciples to proclaim the gospel of the kingdom. Later He sends them again with 58 others.

The use of the word "Sheep" was not by accident. Preachers use the term "sheep" in their pulpits without any idea who the sheep are. Oh, they say that the sheep are Christians. That is not necessarily wrong, but the term Christian is used to include a whole lot of people who are not sheep. Let's look at some passages:

**PSA 74:1 O God, why hast thou cast us off for ever? why doth thine anger smoke against the sheep of thy pasture?**

**PSA 79:13 So we thy people and sheep of thy pasture will give thee thanks for ever: we will shew forth thy praise to all generations.**

**PSA 95:7 For he is our God; and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand. To day if ye will hear his voice,**

**PSA 100:3 Know ye that the LORD he is God: it is he that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are his people, and the sheep of his pasture.**

**~The Coming Messiah: the Righteous Branch**

**JER 23:1 Woe be unto the pastors that destroy and scatter the sheep of my pasture! saith the LORD.**

**ISA 53:6 All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.**

**JER 50:6 My people hath been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray, they have turned them away on the mountains: they have gone from mountain to hill, they have forgotten their restingplace.**

**JER 50:17 Israel is a scattered sheep; the lions have driven him away: first the king of Assyria hath devoured him; and last this Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon hath broken his bones.**

**EZE 34:6 My sheep wandered through all the mountains, and upon every high hill: yea, my flock was scattered upon all the face of the earth, and none did search or seek after them. 7 Therefore, ye shepherds, hear the word of the LORD; 8 As I live, saith the Lord GOD, surely because my flock became a prey, and my flock became meat to every beast of the field, because there was no shepherd, neither did my shepherds search for my flock, but the shepherds fed themselves, and fed not my flock; 9 Therefore, O ye shepherds, hear the word of the LORD; 10 Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I am against the shepherds; and I will require my flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the flock; neither shall the shepherds feed themselves any more; for I will deliver my flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them. ~The Restoration of Israel**

**11 For thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I, even I, will both search my sheep, and seek them out. 12 As a shepherd seeketh out his flock in the day that he is among his sheep that are scattered; so will I seek out my sheep, and will deliver them out of all places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. 13 And I will bring them out from the people, and gather them from the countries, and will bring them to their own land, and feed them upon the mountains of Israel by the rivers, and in all the inhabited places of the country. 14 I will feed them in a good pasture, and upon the high mountains of Israel shall their fold be: there shall they lie in a good fold, and in a fat pasture shall they feed upon the**

mountains of Israel. 15 I will feed my flock, and I will cause them to lie down, saith the Lord GOD.

MIC 2:12 I will surely assemble, O Jacob, all of thee; I will surely gather the remnant of Israel; I will put them together as the sheep of Bozrah, as the flock in the midst of their fold: they shall make great noise by reason of the multitude of men.

ZEC 13:7 Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the LORD of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones.

MAT 9:36 But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.

MAT 10:6 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

MAT 26:31 Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

JOH 10:7 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

JOH 10:16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

JOH 10:26 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

JOH 10:27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

Jesus gave a good analogy when he compared the enemies of Christ to wolves. Wolves eat sheep.

The wolves again are the accursed seed who hate Christ and His sheep.

The next admonition was that they would be persecuted, and hated of all men. The wolves use the media to stir up the people and the government to carry out their judgments.

Many of the sheep who are uninformed and have little understanding of the Scriptures do not know that they are being used to persecute their brethren and carry out the agenda of the wolves.

The Lord said that we would be hauled before councils and kings, but not to fret about what to say. The Holy Spirit would give us the message.

Our persecution is not for our punishment but is God's tool to seal the judgment of the wicked.

While these passages had primary fulfillment in the times of Christ, they still have application today.

### **COST AND REWARDS OF DISCIPLESHIP**

MAT 10:34 Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

MAT 10:35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

MAT 10:36 And a man's foes shall be they of his own household.

**MAT 10:37** He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

**MAT 10:38** And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

**MAT 10:39** He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

**MAT 10:40** He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

**MAT 10:41** He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward.

**MAT 10:42** And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

**MAT 11:1** And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

**MAR 6:12** And they went out, and preached that men should repent. **13** And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

**LUK 9:6** And they departed, and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

One of the places where you can expect the greatest resistance is in your own family. Most people count family above their relationship to God. But if we yield to family, we are not worthy of the kingdom. If a man does not provide for his family, he is worse than an infidel. I Tim 5:8

### The Death of John the Baptist

**MAT 14:1** At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus,

**MAT 14:2** And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

**MAT 14:3** For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife.

**MAT 14:4** For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her.

**MAT 14:5** And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.

**MAT 14:6** But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.

**MAT 14:7** Whereupon he promised with an oath to give her whatsoever she would ask.

**MAT 14:8** And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptist's head in a charger.

**MAT 14:9** And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her.

**MAT 14:10** And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.

**MAT 14:11** And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she

brought it to her mother.

**MAT 14:12** And his disciples came, and took up the body, and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

### **MARK'S ACCOUNT**

**MAR 6:14** And king Herod heard of him; (for his name was spread abroad:) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

**MAR 6:15** Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

**MAR 6:16** But when Herod heard thereof, he said, It is John, whom I beheaded: he is risen from the dead.

**MAR 6:17** For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife: for he had married her.

**MAR 6:18** For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.

**MAR 6:19** Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him; but she could not:

**MAR 6:20** For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and observed him; and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

**MAR 6:21** And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee;

**MAR 6:22** And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

**MAR 6:23** And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.

**MAR 6:24** And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.

**MAR 6:25** And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger the head of John the Baptist.

**MAR 6:26** And the king was exceeding sorry; yet for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

**MAR 6:27** And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought: and he went and beheaded him in the prison,

**MAR 6:28** And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel: and the damsel gave it to her mother.

**MAR 6:29** And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.

### **LUKE'S ACCOUNT OF JOHN THE BAPTIST**

**LUK 9:7** Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead;

**LUK 9:8** And of some, that Elias had appeared; and of others, that one of the old prophets



**was risen again.**

**LUK 9:9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded: but who is this, of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.**

Herod the tetrarch (sub ruler under the Roman system) married into the royal line and then had her killed so he could marry the wife of his brother.

John the Baptist called him on the act and exposed him as a murder and adulterer. Herod was an Edomite of the accursed seed. John's direct and open condemnation angered Herod and He jailed John. He would have killed him but he feared John knowing John was a prophet. The accursed seed know who God is but have not been given the gift of repentance and faith and the gift of the Spirit.

Herodias was Herod's brother Philip's wife. She loathed John for His condemnation. Herodias's daughter danced for Herod's birthday and the king (being drunk) liked it so well he pledged her anything she asked. She asked her mother what should be her request to Herod. She said, give me John's head on a platter.

Herod was sorry, but couldn't back out so he had John executed and the head delivered on a platter.

These accursed seed are viciously evil Herodias was also Edomite.

The crisis at Capernaum

The feeding of the five thousand

Jesus Third Passover

### **Five Thousand Fed-Matthew's Account**

**MAT 14:13 When Jesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.**

**MAT 14:14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.**

**MAT 14:15 And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.**

**MAT 14:16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart; give ye them to eat.**

**MAT 14:17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.**

**MAT 14:18 He said, Bring them hither to me.**

**MAT 14:19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.**

**MAT 14:20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full.**

**MAT 14:21 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.**

**(Con't Next Month)**

### **Five Thousand Fed-Mark's Account**

**MAR 6:33** And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

**MAR 6:34** And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things.

**MAR 6:35** And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed:

**MAR 6:36** Send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

**MAR 6:37** He answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat?

**MAR 6:38** He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

**MAR 6:39** And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass.

**MAR 6:40** And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties.

**MAR 6:41** And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to

heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

MAR 6:42 And they did all eat, and were filled.

MAR 6:43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

MAR 6:44 And they that did eat of the loaves were about five thousand men.

### **Five Thousand Fed-Luke's Account**

LUK 9:12 And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve, and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

LUK 9:13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

LUK 9:14 For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

LUK 9:15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

LUK 9:16 Then he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

LUK 9:17 And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of fragments that remained to them twelve baskets.

### **Five Thousand Fed— John's Account**

JOH 6:1 After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias.

JOH 6:2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

JOH 6:3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

JOH 6:4 And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

JOH 6:5 When Jesus then lifted up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?

JOH 6:6 And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.

JOH 6:7 Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

JOH 6:8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him,

JOH 6:9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

JOH 6:10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

JOH 6:11 And Jesus took the loaves; and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

JOH 6:12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

JOH 6:13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.

Three times Jesus feeds large numbers of people with small amounts of food. There was the

4,000, the 5,000 and the 7,000. These miracles conveyed the Lord's care for the needs of His sheep and His ability to provide if we trust Him.

It is not our needs that keep us broke. It is our wants.

If there is a spiritual application, bread is the Word of God. If God's people would devour as much of the Word as they do natural food, they would be renewed with strength and grow healthy spiritually.

While the average Christian is not expected to eat the Word as a called minister, yet the Word is available to all. Speaking of ministers, few of them spend any real time in the Word. Those who do are full of wisdom and power and usually rejected by most other pastors and Christians.

### **Jesus and His Disciples try to evade the crowds**

**MAT 14:22 And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.**

**23 And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone.**

**MAR 6:45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people. 46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.**

**JOH 6:14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world.**

**15 When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.**

Typically, people want a king that will feed them and give them security in health and life. God wants us to look to Him alone for these needs. One of the reasons the countries of the people of God are in financial trouble is that the people have put demands on government to be their god and provide their needs.

### **Jesus walking on the water**

**MAT 14:24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary.**

**MAT 14:25 And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.**

**MAT 14:26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.**

**MAT 14:27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.**

**MAT 14:28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.**

**MAT 14:29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked**

**MAT 14:30** But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me.

**MAT 14:31** And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

**MAT 14:32** And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased.

**MAT 14:33** Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

### **MARK'S ACCOUNT**

**MAR 6:47** And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

**MAR 6:48** And he saw them toiling in rowing; for the wind was contrary unto them: and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

**MAR 6:49** But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out:

**MAR 6:50** For they all saw him, and were troubled. And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid.

**MAR 6:51** And he went up unto them into the ship; and the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered.

**MAR 6:52** For they considered not the miracle of the loaves: for their heart was hardened.

### **JOHN'S ACCOUNT**

**JOH 6:16** And when even was now come, his disciples went down unto the sea,

**JOH 6:17** And entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

**JOH 6:18** And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew.

**JOH 6:19** So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

**JOH 6:20** But he saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid.

**JOH 6:21** Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

Mark mentioned that their hearts were hardened, revealed by their lack of faith after seeing Him feed the multitude with a small amount of bread. Forgetting God, His miracles and His commands is evidence of and the cause of hardened hearts.

One of the weaknesses of us, His people, is that we expect continuing miracles in order to continue believing. Like Israel of Old, miracles of the parting of the Red Sea for Moses and the people to pass and the subsequent drowning of the army of Pharaoh was soon gone and worn away.

I remember the miracles in Nebraska as the church there went from persecution to victory. When I begin to doubt I make myself remember specific miracles that have happened in my life.

So, in this section of His life, we see Christ doing the things that evidence His Deity and His being a part of the Godhead.

## **RECEPTION AT GENNESARET**

**MAT 14:34** And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

**MAT 14:35** And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased;

**MAT 14:36** And besought him that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

### **Healing at Gennesaret**

**MAR 6:53** And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore.

**MAR 6:54** And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

**MAR 6:55** And ran through that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.

**MAR 6:56** And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him were made whole.

This is where Jesus healed the Demoniac by ordering the demons out of a man and allowing them to enter the swine. Then, the pigs ran into the ocean. He was asked to leave by the business men of the area. But on His return visit, the common people came in droves and the sick were laid in the street. As many as were able to touch Him or be touched were healed.

People ran through out the area and brought people on their sick beds.

Healing was one of the prophetic signs of the Messiah's presence.

## **Discourse on the Bread of Life**

**JOH 6:22** The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone;

**JOH 6:23** (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks:)

**JOH 6:24** When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

**JOH 6:25** And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

**JOH 6:26** Jesus answered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

**JOH 6:27** Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth

unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.

sphragizo

to stamp (with a signet or private mark) for security or preservation (lit. or fig.); by impl. to keep secret, to attest

JOH 6:28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?

JOH 6:29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

JOH 6:30 They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work?

JOH 6:31 Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

JOH 6:32 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

JOH 6:33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

The natural order of the world is death. The order of God is Life. That life was injected into the world order when Adam was created and God lived in and thru Adam. That life left when Adam sinned. Christ came to reinject life into this world order by re-indwelling His people. That officially took place on the Day of Pentecost after Christ returned to His Father and the Spirit of God descended into the hearts of His people.

JOH 6:34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

JOH 6:35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.

JOH 6:36 But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not.

#### The crux of salvation and eternal life

JOH 6:37 All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

JOH 6:38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

JOH 6:39 And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

JOH 6:40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

JOH 6:41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

JOH 6:42 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

JOH 6:43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves.

JOH 6:44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

**JOH 6:45 It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.**

**JOH 6:46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.**

**JOH 6:47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.**

The Lord was for ever trying to use the Old Testament and the physical to bridge into the spiritual. But those who had no spirit or spirit understanding were continually: rejecting, justifying, reasoning, asking and unbelieving.

Christ made it very clear that all who are His will come to Him, believe and obey. All who are not His cannot truly come to Christ. There are always imposters who make professions, pray and claim to know Christ, but eventually, their inability to obey the Lord and love the Lord is seen in their lives.

The Lord used the manna or bread in the wilderness. The accursed seed credited Moses with this bread When He claimed to be the true bread which the manna foreshadowed, and that He was the source of life and eternal life, the cursed seed Jews hated Him and sought to kill Him.

Christ made it clear that those who come to Him believing in Him, which includes obedience to His law/Word, were the ones the Father gave Him and they have eternal life.

John 1 is the answer

**JOH 1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The Word, God, the Spirit, Christ all one and the same.)**

**2 The same was in the beginning with God. (Jesus Christ)**

**3 All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.(Jesus Christ)**

**14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.( Jesus Christ)**

The flesh we were to eat was His Word and Spirit. The people followed Him as long as he provided physically. Many would not follow Him for the spiritual. Some could not follow Him because they were not called of the Father, because they were not His.

No man can come to Christ unless the Father draws them. Why do we feel defeated if people don't come. The Father hasn't called yet. Forced salvation is wrong. Takes more than a prayer and baptism.

When most of the followers turned and left, Jesus asked His Apostles if they would leave also.

Peter reaffirmed by asking, ð Where? Where do we go? You are it Lord..ð

More proof that coming to Christ and believing, is a miraculous spiritual act of the One true God's Spirit. These Jews of the accursed seed could not have spirit, therefore could not be drawn



to Christ.

We still have the promise that all who are His will be drawn of the Father and the Spirit and they will come, they will repent and they will believe.

However, a society with too many non-spirit people in it will make living dangerous for the Spirit people of God unless the Spirit people stay in control of the governing.

This is why America has become corrupted and dangerous. We have allowed those who know not God to take power and they are systematically destroying the foundations of our way of life that was built on the laws of God.

### **HYPOCRISY OF SCRIBES AND PHARISEES (UNWASHED HANDS)**

#### **Tradition and Commandment– Matt's version**

**MAT 15:1 Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,**

**MAT 15:2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.**

**MAT 15:3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?**

**MAT 15:4 For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.**

**MAT 15:5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me;**

**MAT 15:6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.**

**MAT 15:7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying,**

**MAT 15:8 This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me.**

**MAT 15:9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.**

**MAT 15:8 This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me.**

**MAT 15:9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.**

**MAT 15:10 And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand:**

**MAT 15:11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man; but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.**

**MAT 15:12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended, after they heard this saying?**

**MAT 15:13 But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.**

**MAT 15:14 Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.**

**MAT 15:15 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.**

**MAT 15:16** And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

**MAT 15:17** Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

**MAT 15:18** But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man.

**MAT 15:19** For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies:

**MAT 15:20** These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.

### **Followers of Tradition-Mark's Version**

**MAR 7:1** Then came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

**MAR 7:2** And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with unwashen, hands, they found fault.

**MAR 7:3** For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

**MAR 7:4** And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brassen vessels, and of tables.

**MAR 7:5** Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

**MAR 7:6** He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

**MAR 7:7** Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

**MAR 7:8** For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

**MAR 7:9** And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

**MAR 7:10** For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death:

**MAR 7:11** But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; he shall be free.

**MAR 7:12** And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother;

**MAR 7:13** Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

**MAR 7:14** And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand:

**MAR 7:15** There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

**MAR 7:16** If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

**MAR 7:17** And when he was entered into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

**MAR 7:18** And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not

**perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him;  
MAR 7:19 Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?**

**MAR 7:20 And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.**

**MAR 7:21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,**

**MAR 7:22 Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness:**

**MAR 7:23 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.**

Jesus very heavily condemned the Edomite Elders and their traditions. These traditions eventually became the Talmud of today. The Talmud is a pollution of some old Testament law with Baal and Babylonian law precedent.

The Pharisees condemned Jesus and His Disciples for eating without washing their hands. The washing was not for cleanliness, but ritual and religious rites the Elders had put on the people to display their supposed righteousness. The Elders had enacted many washing, bathing and dipping rituals for all kinds of activity.

The Pharisees said that Jesus was breaking the traditions of the Elders.

Jesus' pertinent question is why do you follow your tradition at the expense of violating God's law? This is proof that man made law cannot exceed or supersede God's law.

It is strange, but common today that ministers will admonish their parishioners to obey vile and vulgar laws of the government no matter how badly they violate the laws of God. These Ministers use Romans 13 as their weapon of submission.

I am not a Catholic nor do I support their theology. However, it seems they are the only ones who are brave enough to stand up against government intrusion into Christ's realm, the church. Their recent stand against Obama Care and the issues of abortion and birth control are examples. I am grateful for their stand and that a few of the Evangelicals have joined in. Their stand against Sodomy is also appreciated.

Christ then gives an example of how these traditions violate God's law.

God's commandment demands that we honor our father and mother. Ex 20:12

The Elders had enacted a "tradition" that if the children, son in particular because he had control of the inheritance, donated their funds to the "Church" Elders, they could tell their parents that they were unable to take care of them in their old age.

The implication here is that the children could set up their funds in a trust or annuity where by the children reaped some income and the original money would go to the Elders upon the death of the children.

The Edomites in the priesthood and temple simply told the sons to dedicate it to God and they would be free of obeying or providing for their parents. What a mockery. Many ministries today encourage people to give their estates to them and don't worry about parents or children.

Second, He said that what came out of a man's mouth was more important than what went into it.

The Pharisees were offended. They were plants that God did not plant and God would pluck them up. (See parable of wheat and tares.)

Jesus once again shows that there are people He purposefully angered and tried to drive away from the truth.

## **WITHDRAWAL TO THE NORTH**

### **The Syrophoenician Woman**

**MAT 15:21** Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

**MAT 15:22** And, behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

**MAT 15:23** But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us.

**MAT 15:24** But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

**MAT 15:25** Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

**MAT 15:26** But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs.

**MAT 15:27** And she said, Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table.

**MAT 15:28** Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

### **The Syrophoenician Woman**

**MAR 7:24** And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into an house, and would have no man know it: but he could not be hid.

**MAR 7:25** For a certain woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

**MAR 7:26** The woman was a Greek, a Syrophœnician by nation; and she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

**MAR 7:27** But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

**MAR 7:28** And she answered and said unto him, Yes, Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.

**MAR 7:29** And he said unto her, For this saying go thy way; the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

**MAR 7:30 And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.**

Mark 7:26 is such an important passage. Notice that the identification of this woman was "Syrophenician by nation".

This documents that this woman was a Canaanite by blood. It also documents that in the Bible "nation" is blood line. The nations of Genesis 10, the descendants of Noah were of one blood line. It could not have included the Negro or the Oriental.

My wife and I recently visited a Baptist church not far from our home. The layman teaching the Sunday School lesson was teaching from the sermon on the Mount. His text was :

**MAT 7:6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.**

This man prefaced his study by warning everyone not to ever use any other books, commentaries, dictionaries or original languages to study the Bible. He said that a Strong's Concordance was great for finding verses, but don't read the meanings and definitions. Mr. Strong was a reprobate.

He then proceeded to explain this passage, which he could not do because he had no knowledge of any of the meanings of the words in the text. He chased all over the Bible reading all the verses about dogs and swine that he could read, but could never understand what the pearls were and who or what it was that were not supposed to get these pearls and holy things. He did not read about the Canaanite woman. The Canaanite, Christ called a dog.

What does it mean, "dog"?

kelebh; (compare Arabic kelb, "dog"); kuon; and diminutive kunarion): References to the dog, both in the Old Testament and in the New Testament, are usually of a contemptuous character. A dog, and especially a dead dog, is used as a figure of insignificance. Goliath says to David (1 Sam 17:43): "Amos I a dog, that thou comest to me with staves?" David says to Saul (1 Sam 24:14): "After whom dost thou pursue? after a dead dog, after a flea." Mephibosheth says to David (2 Sam 9:8): "What is thy servant, that thou shouldest look upon such a dead dog as I am?" The same figure is found in the words of Hazael to Elisha (2 Kings 8:13). The meaning, which is obscure in the King James Version, is brought out well in the Revised Version: "But what is thy servant, who is but a dog, that he should do this great thing?" The characteristically oriental interrogative form of these expressions should be noted.

Other passages express by inference the low esteem in which dogs are held. Nothing worse could happen to a person than that his body should be devoured by dogs (1 Kings 14:11; 16:4; 21:19,23, etc.). Job 30:1 says of the youth who deride him that he disdained to set their fathers with the dogs of his flock. In Phil 3:2 and Rev 22:15, dogs are coupled with evil-workers, sorcerers, etc. In Matt 7:6 we read: "Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your pearls before the swine."

From a spiritual standpoint, dogs and swine were cursed seed line people who were generally wicked and without spirit.

Look at the conversation. The woman asked for deliverance for her daughter who was vexed by a devil which is a demon or an evil spirit. She was asking for spiritual intervention.

Christ said He could not give that which was reserved for the children, meaning the people of God, the Adamite/Israelite, to those who are outside that covenant.

The Canaanite said, "I will accept the crumbs from the master's table. In other words, I will take whatever you can give me."

The Lord was impressed by her faith in who He was, the Master.

The Lord expelled the evil spirit from her daughter. That did not give her new birth, eternal life or bring her into the covenant.

Jesus was saying to the Canaanite woman, I cannot give you the pearl, the spirit, the new birth. I can heal your body and give you earthly blessing, but there is nothing eternal.

It is amazing that the history of the Canaanites is well known and the fact that Esau married into the Canaanites (Hittite wives) is well known, yet today's Canaanites are viewed by most Christians as God's chosen people. Today's Jews are a mix of Esau and Oriental bloodlines.

Read the book "Esau in Jewry."

---

## Return through Decapolis, MANY MIRACLES

Healing Crowds

**MAT 15:29** And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there.

**MAT 15:30** And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them:

**MAT 15:31** Insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

### Mark's Version

**MAR 7:31** And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

**MAR 7:32** And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his hand upon him.

**MAR 7:33** And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue;

**MAR 7:34** And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be

opened.

MAR 7:35 And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

MAR 7:36 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it;

MAR 7:37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

### **A brief return to the Sea of Galilee**

#### **The feeding of the four thousand -Matt**

MAT 15:32 Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.

MAT 15:33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude?

MAT 15:34 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few little fishes.

MAT 15:35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.

MAT 15:36 And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

MAT 15:37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left seven baskets full.

MAT 15:38 And they that did eat were four thousand men, beside women and children.

#### **Four Thousand Fed-Mark**

MAR 8:1 In those days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and saith unto them,

MAR 8:2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat:

MAR 8:3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from far.

MAR 8:4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfy these men with bread here in the wilderness?

MAR 8:5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven.

MAR 8:6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them; and they did set them before the people.

MAR 8:7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

MAR 8:8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left seven baskets.

MAR 8:9 And they that had eaten were about four thousand: and he sent them away.

MAT 15:39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

### **Pharisees Test Jesus**

**MAT 16:1** The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven.

**MAT 16:2** He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the sky is red.

**MAT 16:3** And in the morning, It will be foul weather to day: for the sky is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the signs of the times?

**MAT 16:4** A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

### **Mark's Version**

**MAR 8:10** And straightway he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

**11** And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

**12** And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.

### **Con't Next Month**

### **DOCTRINE OF PHARISEES AND SADDUCEES**

**MAT 16:5** And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

**MAT 16:6** Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

**MAT 16:7** And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread.

**MAT 16:8** Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread?

**MAT 16:9** Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

**MAT 16:10** Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?



**MAT 16:11 How is it that ye do not understand that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees?**

**MAT 16:12 Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.**

Leaven of Pharisees is a direct referral to the teachings of the Jewish Pharisees. Jesus considered their teachings as evil and very powerful in growth and mind control.

Today, the teaching, therefore the doctrine, of the Pharisees is the Talmud. The church and the body of Christ at large has been seduced and indoctrinated, even Jewdaized by their teachings.

What are the primary pharisaical teachings that have been accepted into the church?

Universalismó all races are the same and equal before God.

Millennialismó the teachings of the pre-tribulation rapture of the church.

Jewish electionó God's chosen race and country and all who oppose them will be cursed of God.

Judaism is and was the religion of the Hebrews and Jesus.

That the Jews are not only Israelites, but all of the 13 Tribes of Israel.

There are many more.

Jesus warned us to stay away from their teachings and be aware of those who teach them.

### **.Mark's Version**

**MAR 8:13 And he left them, and entering into the ship again departed to the other side.**

**MAR 8:14 Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more than one loaf.**

**MAR 8:15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod.**

**MAR 8:16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have no bread.**

**MAR 8:17 And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened?**

**MAR 8:18 Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?**

**MAR 8:19 When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.**

**MAR 8:20 And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven.**

**MAR 8:21 And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?**

The second teaching here is that Jesus be-raided the Disciples for trying to connect his warning about Pharisee leaven with food shortage. They forgot that Christ multiplied a very small amount of food into a bounty of supply. A good thing for us to remember when hard times come.

### **The blind man near Bethsaida HEALED**

**MAR 8:22 And he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him.**

**MAR 8:23 And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought.**

**MAR 8:24 And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees, walking.**

**MAR 8:25 After that he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.**

**MAR 8:26 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.**

The usual meanings of this story are to show Christ is the Messiah and had power over all sickness and illness and disease.

I reject most of the other teachings that Jesus used tradition that the spit of a first born son had magic or that Jesus spit on the eyes of the blind to show His contempt for the blindness as a act of Satan.

In the Old Testament, Miriam, the sister of Aaron contracted Leprosy as a result of God's curse on her for challenging the authority of Moses. God told Moses that it was too bad that her father did not spit in her face. What did that mean? Not sure.

Again, when Jesus was crucified, the soldiers spit on Jesus and spit in His face. This we understand a contempt.

In general, spit directed at anyone or anything was a display of contempt. But, did Jesus have contempt for the blind man or the deaf man he spit upon? I don't think so. There has to be another idiom that I have not found, but will keep searching.

I personally believe that the message of the spatial is the central teaching of the story.

## **SECOND NORTHERN WITHDRAWAL**

### **Peter's confession,**

**MAT 16:13 When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man am?**

**MAT 16:14 And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist: some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets.**

**MAT 16:15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?**

**MAT 16:16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.**

**MAT 16:17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.**

**MAT 16:18 And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.**

**MAT 16:19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.**

**MAT 16:20 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus**

the Christ.

### ~Peter's Confession of Christ

**MAR 8:27** And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Caesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Whom do men say that I am?

**MAR 8:28** And they answered, John the Baptist; but some say, Elias; and others, One of the prophets.

**MAR 8:29** And he saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answereth and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

**MAR 8:30** And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

### Peter's Confession of Christ

**LUK 9:18** And it came to pass, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

**LUK 9:19** They answering said, John the Baptist; but some say, Elias; and others say, that one of the old prophets is risen again.

**LUK 9:20** He said unto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering said, The Christ of God.

**LUK 9:21** And he straitly charged them, and commanded them to tell no man that thing;

John does not record this event. However, Matthew, Mark and Luke do.

This is a fundamental point of the New Testament and a fundamental question that all people have to ask and answer.

### WHO IS JESUS?

If he is just a man, it matters not how good, powerful, wise, helpful or any other of the many good traits you can come up with. A man is a man and can not overcome death, evil and bring about eternal life.

On the other hand, if He is God, the creator, the father of His Children in this life, that is very big news.

Peter got the answer right. Peter said, "You are the Christ. You are God in the flesh, Immanuel, the Messiah.

Notice what Jesus Christ, God, said in response to him.

**"MAT 16:17** And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven."

Get the impact of that statement. No one can come up with a belief in Christ as God without the direct power of God on his or her mind, will and spirit. This is a spirit thing, not a human thing.

Anyone can say that Jesus is God, but it takes a spiritual event within a man or woman to know that Christ is God.

Jesus told His disciples not to go and tell others about this revelation.

Today, however, churches and Christians are under the belief that if we tell others this truth, they can know it also. No so. Those who have the election of spirit and the Holy Spirit can and will know it, but don't be surprised when most people will not accept it.

This is a blessed promise and faith strengthening fact to the people of God, but will be a matter of division and hostility to others.

### **Christ foretells his death and resurrection.**

#### **Matthew's Version**

**MAT 16:21** From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

**MAT 16:22** Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

**MAT 16:23** But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

#### **Mark's Version**

**MAR 8:31** And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.

**MAR 8:32** And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

**MAR 8:33** But when he had turned about and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

#### **Luke's version**

**LUK 9:22** Saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.

The wisdom to know the difference between God's calling and purpose and compromise.

Jesus had come for the purpose of dying on a specific date and time for a specific purpose. All was moving in that direction and Jesus was reminding the Disciples that time was running out.

Peter thought he was being a good friend to suggest to Jesus that he did not have to do this and that Peter and the Disciples would defend Him. The other Disciples were also thinking this but would not say it. Peter was the bold one.

Jesus rightly turned back to the whole crowd of disciples and admonished them that this kind of talk was from Satan because, if carried out, would prevent the will of God and His redemption of the race.

Jesus told Peter to get behind Him or stop saying these things.

I remember in our case in Nebraska, there came a day when I had to fire the attorneys because their objective was to keep us all out of jail. God's objective was to break the back of Satan in the matter of Christian education. In order to do this, many had to suffer and go to jail including myself.

The same was true when America was founded. The soft hearted wanted to avoid war at all costs, but the people who stood for right and righteousness knew that America could not remain free to worship God if we remained under King George. Those brave souls gave their lives and their fortunes to obtain our liberty.

## **CHRIST SPEAKS OF CROSS BEARING**

### **Discipleship Is Costly**

#### **Matthew's Version**

**MAT 16:24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.**

**MAT 16:25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.**

**MAT 16:26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?**

**MAT 16:27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.**

**MAT 16:28 Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.**

#### **Mark's Version**

**MAR 8:34 And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.**

**MAR 8:35 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it.**

**MAR 8:36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?**

**MAR 8:37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?**

**MAR 8:38 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.**

**MAR 9:1 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with**

power.

### **Luke's Version**

LUK 9:23 And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

LUK 9:24 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

LUK 9:25 For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

LUK 9:26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy angels.

LUK 9:27 But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.

This is further explanation from our Lord as to the costs of standing for the will of God verses compromising the end purpose and goal.

The enemy is glad to accept our compromises. This always is defeat for the righteous and victory for the wicked. Our people in government office just can't seem to get this fact in their heads.

### **The Transfiguration,**

### **Matthew's Version**

MAT 17:1 And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart,

MAT 17:2 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

MAT 17:3 And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

MAT 17:4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

MAT 17:5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.

MAT 17:6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

MAT 17:7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

MAT 17:8 And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

### **Mark's Version**

MAR 9:2 And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

MAR 9:3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on earth can white them.

MAR 9:4 And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with

Jesus.

**MAR 9:5** And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

**MAR 9:6** For he wist not what to say; for they were sore afraid.

**MAR 9:7** And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

**MAR 9:8** And suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

### **The Transfiguration**

**LUK 9:28** And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

**LUK 9:29** And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistening.

**LUK 9:30** And, behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias:

**LUK 9:31** Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

**LUK 9:32** But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

**LUK 9:33** And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

**LUK 9:34** While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entered into the cloud.

**LUK 9:35** And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

**LUK 9:36** And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone. And they kept it close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.

Luke says 8 days after and Matthew and Mark say 6 days after. Peter James and John went up on mount Tabor in Galilee is supposed.

As He began to pray, His countenance changed and His Shekinah Glory was displayed. As the Apostles watched, Elijah and Moses showed up and they began to talk with Christ.

Moses and Elijah had been dead several hundred years, yet they were alive, visible, known and could think and talk.

This brings us to a possible conclusion about our personhood after death. We go back to be with the Lord from whence we came. But remember, Peter, James and John had never seen Moses or Elijah. Nor, had they seen a picture, pictures did not exist and it was against their religion to draw any likeness of them. So, how did they recognize them?

Had to be a spiritual thing. Much like today, we get around new folks and it is not long before your spirit identifies with the spirit of another. We can tell other children of God spiritually.

Also, you can be around people who claim to be God's children, but your spirit does not recognize them as such.

The three Apostles, wanted to build tabernacles on the mountain for Christ, one for Moses and one for Elijah. Then a cloud came up and a voice in the cloud said, this is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased, hear what He has to say..

The three Apostles were so afraid that they fell to the Ground and Christ came over and touched them and told them to get up. They saw nothing after that.

They never spoke of the event in those days.

### **QUESTIONS ABOUT ELIAS**

#### **Matthew's version**

**MAT 17:9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.**

**MAT 17:10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come?**

**MAT 17:11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.**

**MAT 17:12 But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.**

**MAT 17:13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.**

#### **Mark's Version**

**MAR 9:9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.**

**MAR 9:10 And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.**

**MAR 9:11 And they asked him, saying, Why say the scribes that Elias must first come?**

**MAR 9:12 And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things; and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.**

**MAR 9:13 But I say unto you, That Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.**

Only two of the Gospels tell about the Apostles questioning Jesus about Elijah as they came off the mountain.

Get the picture here, the Apostles just saw Elijah on the mountain, alive but dead. Suddenly, their minds recall the old Testament prophecy about Elijah coming

#### **Mal 4:5-6**

**5 Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD:**



**6 And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.**

**KJV**

The great and dreadful day of the Lord is yet to come. The Jews rejected Christ in part because they only looked for the coming of the Messiah for physical warfare to establish them and their nation as world ruler. That is still the view of the Jews today. They did not see nor did they want to see the necessary coming of the Lord for a redemptive death. The Jews did not want Israel to be redeemed anyway.

Jesus made it clear that John the Baptist was the Elijah of their day, but they rejected Him. The great day of Judgment by the Romans in 70 AD was a sign and picture of the future destruction that will come on the Jews for their total rejection of the Messiah.

### **Demoniac boy that disciples couldn't heal**

#### **Matthew's Version**

**MAT 17:14 And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying,**

**MAT 17:15 Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.**

**MAT 17:16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.**

**MAT 17:17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.**

**MAT 17:18 And Jesus rebuked the devil; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour.**

**MAT 17:19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?**

**MAT 17:20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.**

**MAT 17:21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.**

#### **Mark's Version**

**MAR 9:14 And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them.**

**MAR 9:15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him saluted him.**

**MAR 9:16 And he asked the scribes, What question ye with them?**

**MAR 9:17 And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit;**

**MAR 9:18 And wheresoever he taketh him, he teareth him: and he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast him out; and they could not.**

**MAR 9:19 He answereth him, and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with**

you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

MAR 9:20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

MAR 9:21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child.

MAR 9:22 And oftentimes it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

MAR 9:23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

MAR 9:24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

MAR 9:25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

MAR 9:26 And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead.

MAR 9:27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up; and he arose.

MAR 9:28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

MAR 9:29 And he said unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

#### Luke's Version

LUK 9:37 And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him.

LUK 9:38 And, behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, look upon my son: for he is mine only child.

LUK 9:39 And, lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him that he foameth again, and bruising him hardly departeth from him.

LUK 9:40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out; and they could not.

LUK 9:41 And Jesus answering said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy son hither.

LUK 9:42 And as he was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare him. And Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.

LUK 9:43 And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God. But while they wondered every one at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples,

Several things about this event of the casting out of the demons.

First, this test came immediately after a great mountain top experience. In life, it can almost always be expected that Satan will throw in our paths a great satanically motivated spiritual test after we have just finished a great spiritual mountain top experience.

Secondly, the Disciples failed to gain victory over the evil spirits because of a lack of faith

Thirdly, Jesus told His disciples that their faith could be built to this level to overcome evil spirits by prayer and fasting.

We are living in the last days on our Biblical era. Every era of Bible History has ended with great demonic and evil spirit intervention in the affairs of man and the world.

Jesus Christ gave us His Spirit so that we could have power over the evil spirit serpents and we can tread them to death. However, few have accomplished this. While TV preachers fool and mislead the people into believing that this power is for conquering sickness and personal failure the nation dies at the hands of ill equipped preachers and church members.

The evil that is to be tread down by prayer and fasting with imprecatory prayers is the evil powers of government whether it be civil or ecclesiastical. And that power can only be halted by prayer and fasting faith.

I pray for the day that God will raise up a prophet which such a power.

## **Christ foretells his death and resurrection,**

### **Matthew's Version**

**MAT 17:22 And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:**

**MAT 17:23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry.**

### **Mark's Version**

**MAR 9:30 And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it.**

**MAR 9:31 For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.**

**MAR 9:32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.**

### **Luke's Version**

**LUK 9:44 Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.**

**LUK 9:45 But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to ask him of that saying.**

This little passage teaches a great truth. There are some things we are not allowed to know before they happen and some we know but do not understand.

I do not know what difference it would have made if the Disciples had understood the Lord's comment, but it must have been significant. Maybe they would have encouraged His death. Maybe they would have not experienced the need for faith during those three days and nights. Maybe they would not have had the great joy that they received when they saw Him after He rose from the Grave and they never thought it possible.

All I know is that sometimes, we have to wait in the unknown.

**In Capernaum again**  
**The shekel in the fish's mouth**

**Matthew's Version**

**MAT 17:24** And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute money came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

**MAT 17:25** He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

**MAT 17:26** Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free.

**MAT 17:27** Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

It is interesting that Matthew is the old writer that records this incident. Remember, Matthew was a tax collector. This stood out to him. He understood the law on taxes.

This tax was the annual Temple Tax.

**Ex 30:11-16**

**11** And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying,

**12** When thou takest the sum of the children of Israel after their number, then shall they give every man a ransom for his soul unto the LORD, when thou numberest them; that there be no plague among them, when thou numberest them.

**13** This they shall give, every one that passeth among them that are numbered, half a shekel after the shekel of the sanctuary: (a shekel is twenty gerahs:) an half shekel shall be the offering of the LORD.

**14** Every one that passeth among them that are numbered, from twenty years old and above, shall give an offering unto the LORD.

**15** The rich shall not give more, and the poor shall not give less than half a shekel, when they give an offering unto the LORD, to make an atonement for your souls.

**16** And thou shalt take the atonement money of the children of Israel, and shalt appoint it for the service of the tabernacle of the congregation; that it may be a memorial unto the children of Israel before the LORD, to make an atonement for your souls.

The tax was not levied from women, minors, old men (Num 1:42,45), and the Levites (Num 1:47), they being not numbered.

Ex 30:11-16 It is evident that this taxing implies the taking of a census, for otherwise the impost could not have been collected.

The point being made here is two fold. First, if a male over 20 years old and not exempt by other

laws, refused to be counted, he would be an alien to the commonwealth of Israel. He would not be a citizen. If he wanted to be counted and refused to pay the tax, he would die of the plague since it was against God's laws to count men age 20 to age 50 because this tended to give the king great pride and confidence in the strength of his Army ability.

So, now, would Jesus be counted and would he pay?

Jesus responded by showing that He was exempt, but not on the basis of any law in Scripture. He pointed out that Kings never did tax their sons. Since God is King of Kings and Jesus Christ is His son, He is therefore exempt. However, Jesus paid the tax to keep from offending them.

Question: WWJD? This is proof that this acronym is silly. Jesus did not mind offending the enemies, however, He was concerned about being killed before His time.

Many things in the Bible are exemplary, but many take it to extremes and avoid all confrontation which is compromise and destructive to the faith, the church and the nation.

Jesus paid the tax by a miracle that cost Him nothing.

It would be well to remember that our tithes are our tax and the man is responsible to keep the taxes paid for his whole family.



## **WHO IS GREAT IN KINGDOM**

### **Matthew's Version**

**MAT 18:1** At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

**MAT 18:2** And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

**MAT 18:3** And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

**MAT 18:4** Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

**MAT 18:5** And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me.

**MAT 18:6** But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

### **Mark's Version**

**MAR 9:33** And he came to Capernaum: and being in the house he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way?

**MAR 9:34** But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who should be the greatest.

**MAR 9:35** And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

**MAR 9:36** And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

**MAR 9:37** Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

**MAR 9:42** And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

### Luke's Version

**LUK 9:46 Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.  
47 And Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, took a child, and set him by him,  
48 And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this child in my name receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.**

The whole topic here is the prideful way the Apostles were lobbying for position in the kingdom as they understood it.

The Lord had just announced the Kingdom and met with them on the Mount where He was transfigured. They expected the kingdom to manifest itself immediately.

The Lord had to rebuke them in a way that would not kill their desire to do more and better things, but to kill the pride of position and power.

This is very much a problem today among God's people. The "political" bargaining among denominational leaders and among local church leaders is disgraceful.

Also, the prideful attitude of those in the Christian Israel Kingdom message is not much better. There are many who vie for leadership and power among us too.

The Lord said that greatness in any of His work will be measured by humble, self sacrificial giving of one's self like a child.

He even brought a child and sat the child on His knee explaining that we would have to be converted into these humbles self giving creatures.

We are not to serve Christ for mammon and power or position.  
Then Christ spoke about the receiving of Children in the faith. We are not to discourage children from coming to the Lord.

However, I do not share the same fervor for baptizing children before they are mature enough to understand the commitment. Baptism, as with Jesus, was induction into service, priesthood. This is not the clergy, but Scripture said that we are all to be priests and kings.

Church membership is also about service and community. I encourage children to come to the Lord, but I do not baptize them until they can understand the commitment they are making at baptism to a life time of service and suffering for the Lord's work. Christ was baptized into the priesthood at age 30.

Christ then warned His Apostles about offending the children or hindering them from coming to Him.

The Lord then goes on to speak about other types of offenses we need to strongly guard against.



Jesus is speaking to His people, His disciples, yet He admonished them that they had to be converted to have value in the kingdom. Conversion is a Spirit act that transforms the heart and will of Gods people to be obedient and servants. Christ makes it pretty clear that those who desire to be great will not be great. Those who chose to serve will be great.

### **Other offenses**

**MAT 18:7** Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!

**MAT 18:8** Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire.

**MAT 18:9** And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

**MAT 18:10** Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

### **Mark's Version**

**MAR 9:43** And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

**MAR 9:44** Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

**MAR 9:45** And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

**MAR 9:46** Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

**MAR 9:47** And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire:

**48** Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

The central message of these passages gets lost many times because hell fire and brimstone preachers need passages to back up their claims that unbelievers will burn eternally in fire.

Let me make it clear, I believe in eternal fire. Too many passages verify this. However, I am hard pressed to find that humans, with possible exception of the cursed seed, will burn forever. The fire is eternal, the body of humans enduring in that fire forever is quite a different matter.

In these passages, the term ðhellö is translated from the word, ðgeehnaö or Gehenna . Gehenna was the valley of Hinnon where Molech worship involved the burning of babies to the false god. It became the city dump for Jerusalem. It was a place where the lowest, filth of man and God was burned. But it was consumed. The garbage did not burn forever. The fire burned forever because they kept putting fresh garbage on the pile. Mark is the only one that mentions the worms that feed in the pile of rubbish. Now, back to the message of these passages.

The message dealt directly to the offending of children and keeping them from coming to the Lord. The Lord just expanded that offense to other things such as temptation through the eyes or hands or feet. Some people can't stop smoking, or drinking or lusting with the eyes.

### **Salt Sacrifice**

**MARK 9:49 For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.**

**50 Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his saltiness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.**

You have three things here; salt, sacrifice self. Salt was money or highly valued. To sacrifice that which was highest in value was the best sacrifice. Every child of God would be salted by fire or testing. Every Child of God is to be salt in society. We are to have salt in ourselves. This means that society will be hurt, sting and flinch from our lives and testimony. We will be like salt in the wound of their sin.

The Christian and the church today have lost their saltiness. The Lord says that salt that has lost its saltiness is worth nothing but to be thrown out and trampled by men. That is why we are being rejected by the world and about to be trampled. We no longer offend by pointing out the sins of the world.

### **Why Jesus Came**

**MAT 18:11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.**

**MAT 18:12 How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray?**

**13 And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray.**

**14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.**

It is important to pay attention when you study this passage. Notice the word “Lost”. Notice the words, “sheep”.

The Lord says He came to seek and to save the “Lost.” The word “lost” in this passage is translated from the Greek word, “apolluim”.

This Greek word means, “put away for judgment”.

Then notice that Jesus gives a parable about sheep who have been “put away for judgment” “lost” and He is come to seek and save them.

This is a direct reference to the children of the House of Israel and Judah who were out away from their homeland by Assyria and Babylon, scattered to the other Adamic/Noah nations. Jesus even states in another place that he has sheep in another fold, meaning in Europe and other places outside Jerusalem and Judea.

Preacher make a mockery of the Gospel when they try to include all the people of the world of all races. Jesus Christ came to Redeem and save His own.

### **When Others Do Your Work**

### **Mark's Version**

**MAR 9:38** And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us: and we forbad him, because he followeth not us.

**MAR 9:39** But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

**MAR 9:40** For he that is not against us is on our part.

**MAR 9:41** For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

### **Luke's Version**

**LUK 9:49** And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we forbad him, because he followeth not with us.

**50** And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against us is for us.

The word “devils” here is the word for demon. The key was in the “name of Jesus”. If someone is doing miracles in the “Names of Jesus” do not oppose him or stop him even if he does not follow you. Why? Jesus says that a man cannot speak evil or badly of someone whose name and power is being bragged about for a miracle.

This is one reason that I have never attacked people who publically make a show of healing miracles on TV and in tent meeting, etc. While I do not work this way, but anoint with oil and pray privately following James 5:14, I leave others to the Lord.

The Lord goes on to state that even if someone only gives a cup of water in the Lords name, he will be remembered and blessed.

Then, the Lord goes back to the subject of the children.

### **FORGIVENESS AND PRAYER**

**MAT 18:15** Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

**MAT 18:16** But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

**MAT 18:17** And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.

While all of God's people/sheep are part of His body, the Lord has always instructed His followers to operate through the local body of called out and obedient followers.

As He had just instructed, there is no way to avoid people being offended or wrongs being committed against one another, no matter that we are born again children of God. So there has to be a way to handle these offenses and maintain the peace and tranquility of the church body.

The process is simple, first, the offended party will go to the offender and point out the offense seeking an apology and giving forgiveness.

If that doesn't work, the offended party seeks one or two other spiritual brothers to go with Him to the offender and seek the same.

If this does not work, the matter is taken to the body and the whole local body or church seeks the offender to make amends.

If that does not bring the offender to ask forgiveness, the offender is to be cast out of the body and members are to avoid his fellowship and business always leaving the door open for reconciliation.

### **The Power of The Church**

**MAT 18:18 Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.**

**MAT 18:19 Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.**

**MAT 18:20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.**

I call this the power of imprecatory prayer. The church, as a body has tremendous power through this binding prayer of Spirit led like minded believers. The church has dethroned rulers, judges, enemies of darkness and powers of Satan at all levels through this power. (You can get my message on imprecatory prayer) This prayer is especially great in binding members who won't repent and ask forgiveness for their offenses against the brethren.

Those who gather together to pray this prayer must have clean hands, meaning they cannot be living in sin and rebellion against God and or the church and expect God to answer their prayer.

### **Parable of unmerciful servant**

**MAT 18:21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?**

**MAT 18:22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.**

The Lord answers Peter and then gives an illustration. The 70 X 7 is simply a multiplication of the number for perfection or completeness. There is never a reason to hold a grudge or keep unforgiveness in your heart. It only hurts and limits you, not the offender.

Forgiving an offender does not mean that you have to become his patsy or sucker. Fool me once, shame on you, fool me twice, shame on me..

### **Parable**

**MAT 18:23 Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants.**

**MAT 18:24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents.**

**MAT 18:25** But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

**MAT 18:26** The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

**MAT 18:27** Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

**MAT 18:28** But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

**MAT 18:29** And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

**MAT 18:30** And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

**MAT 18:31** So when his fellow servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

**MAT 18:32** Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

**MAT 18:33** Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow servant, even as I had pity on thee?

**MAT 18:34** And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

**MAT 18:35** So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

On an individual basis, the message of the parable is that we have all been forgiven great sin and debt to God. Therefore, for us to hold a brother accountable to the last straw for their offenses against us is cold and indifferent on our part.

Please understand that the offender and the offended in this case were both Adamic and believers. There is no command to let the wicked off the hook.

From a national interpretation, which I believe every parable was primarily given and recorded, we must look at personal and national debt of the nations of God's people.

There is an element of people who have adopted the principals of Baal and Babylon in finances putting God's people and God's people nations in debt. Though they be rich, they continue to hold God's people and their nations to the fire to collect every last penny of that debt. This puts God's people into slavery and poverty and servitude.

Yes, God's people sinned by getting into debt. God allows us to suffer for that sin, but that does not relieve the lenders of their sins. They have an obligation before God to forgive the debts and allow God's people to prosper.

The Lord has promised a day of Jubilee and freedom that will destroy the assets and control of the wicked. That day is nearing.

Some believe that the two parties of this parable are the House of Judah, the lender and the

House of Israel, the borrower. I am not sure I agree with this since the House of Judah has been incorporated into the House of Israel and the current Jews are not the House of Judah.

## **Christ at the feast of tabernacles, in the Fall**

**Rejects the advice of unbelieving brethren  
Jesus Teaches at the Feast**

**JOH 7:1 After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.**

Jesus lived in Galilee, the home of the Tribe of Benjamin and other Israelites. It is important to remember that the Galileans and other Israelites were never called Jews.

It is equally important to remember that in Jerusalem, where the House of Judah had at one time been the dominant people, that body of people had become extremely mixed in Babylon before their return and all the pure blooded Judahites had been killed by Herod, an Edomite, when he came to power. At the time of Christ, there were very few true Hebrew blooded Judahites.

The mixed bloods were called Jews, falsely taking on the cover name of the Hebrew Judahites. It was these people who hated Jesus and eventually killed Him. These same people eventually moved out of Palestine and mixed with the orientally mixed Khazars. They make up the greatest part of Jewry today.

Jesus avoid them by staying out of Jerusalem as much as possible until it was time for Him to die.

**JOH 7:2 Now the Jews' feast of tabernacles was at hand.**

Notice that these same Jews had hijacked the feasts and rites of the Hebrews.

**JOH 7:3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judaea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest.**

**JOH 7:4 For there is no man that doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world.**

**JOH 7:5 For neither did his brethren believe in him.**

**JOH 7:6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is always ready.**

**JOH 7:7 The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil.**

**JOH 7:8 Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast: for my time is not yet full come.**

**JOH 7:9 When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee.**

Jesus had brothers and they did not yet believe that he was the Messiah. This is natural.

Familiarity breeds contempt as they say.

They began to taunt Him and tell Him that he should go to Jerusalem and show off His miracles if was truly the Messiah.

But Jesus wisely refrain knowing that it would get Him killed before His time.

### ***GOES PRIVATELY TO JERUSALEM***

**JOH 7:10 But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.**

After His brothers left and went to Jerusalem, He too went to Jerusalem, but in secret.

### ***ANTICIPATION ABOUT MESSIAHSHIP***

**JOH 7:11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?**

**JOH 7:12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay; but he deceiveth the people.**

**JOH 7:13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him for fear of the Jews.**

This is the trade mark of the Jews. They put fear in everyone who would dare to stand up for the truth. Just as then, it is so today. Most Christians, pastors and Christian leaders will not openly preach against sin, against the Jewish controlled evils of usury, entertainment, pornography, the news and other controls of evil in our society for fear of these people.

Most people deny that it is the Jews who control the power of slander and prosecution, but they are still afraid of something and they know not what. They refuse to believe the "Elect people of God (sic)" could be this evil.

**JOH 7:14 Now about the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.**

Jesus was obedient to the Law, He went to the feasts as required by Law. But He used it as an opportunity to teach.

**JOH 7:15 And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?**

What made Jesus' teachings so electrifying and unusual? He was speaking as one with authority.  
Mark 1:27

**JOH 7:16 Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.**

**JOH 7:17 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself.**

**JOH 7:18 He that speaketh of himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.**

The key to authority was being called to speak, speaking of the one who empowers you and not seeking glory for one's self. Jesus will claim that He is speaking for God the Father.

**JOH 7:19 Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?**

**JOH 7:20 The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?**

**JOH 7:21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.**

**JOH 7:22 Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision; (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers;) and ye on the sabbath day circumcise a man.**

**JOH 7:23 If a man on the sabbath day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the Sabbath day?**

The Pharisees were legalists. They could not accept that someone outside their ranks would be called and empowered to do things they have forbidden to be done on the Sabbath.

Jesus challenged them. He said, you do circumcision on the Sabbath to keep the Law, we heal on the Sabbath to keep the law and you seek to kill me.

The Pharisees denied that they were seeking to kill him, but a bystander asked the question that was openly known, is this not the man you seek? Why have you not arrested Him.

**JOH 7:24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.**

**JOH 7:25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he, whom they seek to kill?**

**JOH 7:26 But, lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?**

**JOH 7:27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.**

**JOH 7:28 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.**

**JOH 7:29 But I know him: for I am from him, and he hath sent me.**

The Pharisees made a claim that was not Scriptural. They said that when the Messiah comes, no one would know him or where he came from.

Jesus said, you know me and know that I have come from my Father (God) whom you do not know.

**JOH 7:30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.**

**JOH 7:31 And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this man hath done?**

The enemies tried to grab Him, but were prevented miraculously because it was not His time yet. Many people were so amazed they began to ask, if this is not the real Christ, will the real Christ



be able to do more than this Jesus? Many believed on Him.

**JOH 7:32 The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.**

**JOH 7:33 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me.**

**JOH 7:34 Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come.**

**JOH 7:35 Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?**

**JOH 7:36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come?**

Several great teachings here. The Jews tried to arrest Him, but couldn't. Then Jesus told them that He was only there for a short while and when He left, those who hated Him would seek for Him and not be able to find Him. Jesus said that He would return to God.

The Pharisees ask a very interesting question. Will He go to the dispersed, scattered Israelites among the Gentiles and preach to the Gentiles?

First, the Pharisees were very aware, as Paul and Luke state in Acts 26:7, that they knew where the Israelites were. They were in Eastern Europe and the Isles of the now UK. They had themselves become Gentilized. They were lost in that they were put away for punishment, but they were not out of God's mind or in a place unseen by the Lord.

**JOH 7:37 In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.**

**JOH 7:38 He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.**

**JOH 7:39 (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)**

**JOH 7:40 Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the Prophet.**

**JOH 7:41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?**

**JOH 7:42 Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?**

**JOH 7:43 So there was a division among the people because of him.**

**JOH 7:44 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.**

As is always the case, there is division over Jesus Christ. Christ stood up on the last day of the feast and made the offer to save those who would come to Him. But instead of evaluating the message, they evaluated the messenger.

There was an argument about where he came from. He was known as being a Galilean, The Scripture prophesied that He would be born in Bethlehem. No one tried to confirm His birth place.

Jesus was born in Bethlehem, but had to move to Galilee among the people of Nazareth. The Jews saw the Israelites and the Tribe of Benjamin as a lower class and refused to allow them to live in and dwell in the city of Jerusalem or its territory. Bethlehem is just across the small mountain outside Jerusalem. Because of this, Joseph and Mary took Jesus out of Bethlehem to Egypt and then back to Galilee and Nazareth.

Again, the priests and Pharisees wanted Him arrested, but no one dared to touch Him.

**JOH 7:45 Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?**

**JOH 7:46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.**

Again, the hearts of true Israelites could not do Him harm even if they were in the service of the Temple and the Jews.

**JOH 7:47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived?**

**JOH 7:48 Have any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him?**

**JOH 7:49 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.**

The officers asked if any of them had believed or followed Jesus, because if they did, they would be cursed. The Jews saw themselves as the only true followers of the covenant left. This certainly was not God's program.

Understand that the sin of the priests and Pharisees was not their concern for the Law, but their concern for their version of the law, the traditions of the Elders which Jesus condemned and their lack of concern for the rest of the people.

**JOH 7:50 Nicodemus saith unto them, (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them,)**

**JOH 7:51 Doth our law judge any man, before it hear him, and know what he doeth?**

**JOH 7:52 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.**

**JOH 7:53 And every man went unto his own house.**

Nicodemus was a true man of the law. Jesus called him a Master of Israel. Nicodemus was going to see that Jesus had a hearing before He was judged.

You can see the disdain of the Jews for the people of Galilee as they speak of the fact that Prophet had come out of Galilee. Little did they know that all of the Apostles except one would come out of Galilee and the Tribe of Benjamin except one.

The woman taken in adultery

**JOH 8:1 Jesus went unto the mount of Olives.**

**JOH 8:2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them.**

**JOH 8:3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and**

**when they had set her in the midst,**

**JOH 8:4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.**

**JOH 8:5 Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?**

**JOH 8:6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not.**

**JOH 8:7 So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.**

**JOH 8:8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.**

**JOH 8:9 And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.**

**JOH 8:10 When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?**

**JOH 8:11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.**

What is the message here? God certainly did not remove the law against adultery. He did not say they were wrong about this woman. Jesus did not tolerate her sin. There is a real truth here. Those who harp the loudest against a sin are probably the most guilty of that sin or other sins.

Sin was to be handled in an orderly fashion by the law, by those who are charged with the responsibility. None of that seemed to be present here in this incident.

First, adultery was a serious offense. Adultery was the mixing of seed, A woman who would make her body available to the seed of different men is guilty of the greatest denial of her God, His race, and His children. The mixing of seed can be within the race or among races. We are not told which this was.

The problem was not that this woman was not guilty or that she should not be stopped and judged. The problem was the unclean hands (lives) of those who were trying to carry out what should have been the lawful acts of enforcing God's laws.

God may allow the wicked to punish His children, but He will not let hypocrites do the job.

This story is also the picture of two other lessons. One, there is forgiveness and hope for a woman in sin. Just as Jesus told her to go and sin no more, that is a door of opportunity for her to forsake her sin and start over.

Secondly, this woman was a picture of Israel, the wife of God. God's wife had gone into adultery with other gods. God had actually cast them out and scattered them. The Jews and the world and dragged them into the street and cast stones on her, wasting her, punishing her and destroying her.

Jesus Christ has come to redeem Israel and save her and renew His covenant with her and eventually re-marry her. The barbs of condemnation were those God would speak against the

Jews who refused to forgive and accept the House of Israel back into the fold.

### **Discourse on the Light of the World**

**JOH 8:12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.**

Israel had long known God as the source of light. God was light in the darkness in Egypt, God led them by a pillar of light. He was the light in the wilderness. The coming Messiah was prophesied to be the coming Light.

**Isa 42:6**

**6 I the LORD have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles;  
KJV**

Unfortunately, God predicted that men would love darkness more than light.

**JOH 3:19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.**

The Jews then began to question His right to testify.

**JOH 8:13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true.**

**JOH 8:14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of myself, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go.**

**JOH 8:15 Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man.**

**JOH 8:16 And yet if I judge, my judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.**

**JOH 8:17 It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true.**

**JOH 8:18 I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me.**

**JOH 8:19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.**

**JOH 8:20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet come.**

**JOH 8:21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come.**

**JOH 8:22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.**

### **Who These Jews Really Were and Are**

Reread John 8:1-22) from last Month

Jesus now gets to the real problem with the Jews and that is He identifies their seed, **their generations, their heritage. They are not His people.**

**JOH 8:23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world.**

You unbelieving Jews (Edomite or mixed) are from downward, meaning the world of evil, Satan, Devil, evil spirits, the Rephaim, etc.

Jesus said of Himself, ōI amō. This is the same God who spoke to Moses and said, I AM THAT I AMō Ex 3:14

You cursed seed are of this cosmos, this world order, I am over, above it.

**JOH 8:24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.**

One of the truths that is never discussed about these mixed seed of cursed and Adamic seed is that they do have sin, but they do not have a redeemer, Adam/Israel does have a redeemer.

One of the reasons that I believe those outside the race of Adam and Israel cannot be redeemed is because they do not have a redeemer. The law was very strict that a redeemer had to be a ōkinsmanō, ōnear of kinō. Lev. 25:25, 48, 49

Jesus is not of mixed blood and therefore, not next of kin.

**JOH 8:25 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even the**

**same that I said unto you from the beginning.**

**JOH 8:26 I have many things to say and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.**

**JOH 8:27 They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.**

One of the many truths about the Jews of cursed seed is that they have no understanding of God, or spiritual things related to God.

**JOH 8:28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.**

**JOH 8:29 And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him.**

**JOH 8:30 As he spake these words, many believed on him.**

The inhabitants of Jerusalem at the time of Jesus were a mix of True Israelites and those who were Edomites or a mix of Hebrew and Edomite blood.

Many of the mixed blood (so-called Jews) were in power. Herod had killed off all the seed of Aaron he could find and put Edomites and mixed blood people in office.

When Jesus would talk to a group of these people, He was trying to reach the true Hebrews and at the same time rejecting those who had been born into the cursed seed of Edom Esau.

In this passage, He is reaching out to those who are Hebrews and need His redemption. Those who reject Him he will speak to later in a very condemning and rejecting way.

### **Discourse on spiritual freedom**

**JOH 8:31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed;**

**JOH 8:32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.**

The true sign of a child or son of God is that they continue. Jesus said in John 10 that, “**My sheep hear my voice and they FOLLOW me**”. A picture of continuing.

**JOH 8:33 They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?**

This proved their lineage. They were Abraham's seed through Isaac and Esau. True, they never did serve in bondage.

The true line of the covenant came through Isaac and Jacob. They did serve 400 years in Egypt and bondage.

**JOH 8:34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.**

**JOH 8:35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.**

**JOH 8:36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.**

First, Jesus was telling these Jews that they were in bondage to their sin, thus not free.

Secondly, Jesus was saying that they, the Edomite Jews were in the House of Judah and the Temple and among the covenant temporarily, but they were about to be removed. They had sinned and became the servants of sin, therefore they were to be removed from that position. Jesus tells them more plainly in Matt 21:43

### **To The Unbelieving**

**JOH 8:37 I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.**

This is a very revealing passage. This passage is one of many that verify that the DNA for Spirit dwelling in the people of God is passed through the purity of the genes of our race.

These Edomite Jews can trace their genes back to Abraham through Esau, but they can also trace their genes back to Cain and his oriental mix through Esau's wives who were Hittites.

God's people need to understand that they produce children who have no redeemer when they produce children with people of other races or mixed racial genetics.

The second thing this passage points out is that these people did not possess a "place", a dwelling, a temple within them where the Ever living God or His Spirit could dwell.

I'm not sure if people know the severity of this flaw. How can you be a part of God's indwelling, and thus ruling and thus dominion, and thus eternal life if you have no "Place" in you for Him to dwell?

This is the second great problem with interracial marriage and child production. We started in America with a population over 95% of people who had a place for God in them and had a kinsman redeemer. We now have a country that is less than 50% of such people. It is no wonder that we now have a society of corruption and a nation in God's judgment.

**JOH 8:38 I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.**

It could not be plainer. Jesus and His sons have a father and the devil and his sons have a father. This division of seed lines was laid out in Genesis

**GEN 3:15 And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.**

We by genetics and observation and practice do the things of our Father. Sheep follow their father and goats, dogs, hogs and wolves follow their father

**JOH 8:39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.**

Again, Jesus clears up the facts about genetic heritage. Abraham and God do not claim mixed blood offspring as being their own. Neither did Ezra and Nehemiah. These prophets forced the Israelites to send all their foreign spouses and the children back to the Moabites.

**JOH 8:40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.**

**JOH 8:41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God.**

**JOH 8:42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.**

These Jews accused Jesus of being born of a bastard relationship. That is the real meaning of their statement that they were not born of fornication.

Esau lived by the sword. One of the traits of the wicked is that they seek the power of the sword and death for all they oppose. This was not the trait of Abraham or God. You see this sword power displayed among the Arab, the Oriental tribes and their mix of the earth

**JOH 8:43 Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word.**

The reason you cannot win cursed people and people outside the covenant to a lasting and abiding sonship in Christ is because they do not have the ability to hear with spiritual ears nor a place for Him to dwell.

These people may make a mental decision to follow the laws of the Lord and even be blessed in this life, but they are not covenant people who are empowered to be the redeemed sons of the Living God.

**JOH 8:44 Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.**

**JOH 8:45 And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.**

**JOH 8:46 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?**

Jesus Christ made it clear who their progenitor was and why they were like him. It also explained their hatred for Christ.

Today's Jews have the same hatred for Christ, the Bible and Christians, the Sons of God. They are of the same seed line.

**The Children Are Believers**



**JOH 8:47 He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.**

Confirmation again that all who are of God hear God. Being of God means to be of His gene line, His DNA, His sons in water, flesh and spirit.

If you are not of that heritage, you do not hear God calling, correcting, leading and guiding you

**JOH 8:48 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?**

These traits are so identifying of the people behind them. Here they are reminding Jesus Christ that they call Him a Samaritan . That means, they accused him of being a mixed blood.

Today, what is the way the wicked Canaanites of the Red Communists and others of the Canaanite theology work. Stalin said, "If you want to tell a lie that is believed, tell a big one, tell it often and accuse your accuser of the same thing he is accusing you".

These Jews were mixed blood. They knew they were outside the covenant and could never be inside it. So, they accused Jesus of being a mixed blood.

**JOH 8:49 Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.**

**JOH 8:50 And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.**

Jesus now ties the ideas together. I am of God. I am God. I am and possess His Spirit.

You are a devil, you have his genetics, you have his spirit. I am not nor do I have a devil, you do.

**JOH 8:51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.**

**JOH 8:52 Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.**

**JOH 8:53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself?**

**JOH 8:54 Jesus answered, If I honour myself, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God:**

**JOH 8:55 Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.**

**JOH 8:56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.**

**JOH 8:57 Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?**

**JOH 8:58 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.**

Jesus restated His power to give eternal life. The Jews could not process this. They sought to use so-called logic. They said Abraham and the prophets are greater than you and they are dead.

Jesus Christ made it clear that they had seen Him before He came to earth.. Again the Edomite Jews refer to logic.

“How could that be. Jesus? You are only 30 years old. They were dead before you came here.

Then Jesus Christ revealed He was God, again. “I am, that I am“. “Before the prophets came into being I existed“.

That was too much for them. They understood that Jesus was claiming to be God. They hated God and would not accept Him.

**JOH 8:59 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.**

They did not recognize the miracle of His escape.

**LUK 9:51 And it came to pass, when the time was come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,**

“Received up“ had reference to His ascension before the day of Pentecost. In order for that day to come, Christ had to die and raise again, then spend time with His Disciples and Apostles. Therefore, He set His face to go to Jerusalem to die.

**LUK 9:52 And sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him.**

The road from Galilee to Jerusalem was shortest through Samaria. He sent disciples to Samaria, near Jerusalem to set up a house for their meals and prayers.

**LUK 9:53 And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.**

There was natural hostility between the Jews and Samaria. The Jews saw them as less than human, mixed blood. So, when the Samaritans saw that their guest were really preparing to go to Jerusalem, they lost interest in helping them.

**LUK 9:54 And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did?**

**LUK 9:55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.**

**LUK 9:56 For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.**

The Apostles wanted to exercise the power of Elijah and destroy those uncooperating people. But Jesus made it clear that His first mission was not one of judgment, but salvation. They went

to another town. This would become a principal of Christians to go where you are wanted. This flies in the face of those who would go to the heathen savages who are more interested in killing you than listening to you.

All missionary work is for the establishment of the Commandments, statutes and judgments of the Lord in the individual, the family the culture and national law. Today Missionaries go out under United Nations Treaty. They have to sign an agreement that they will not proselytize and try to change the government of the people. Thus, modern day missionary work is simply another way the people of God are robbed by the heathen.

**MAT 8:19 And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.**

**MAT 8:20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.**

The first would be follower did not count the cost. I remember in years gone by I became envious of those great preachers who traveled the land and preached in many places. But when it came my time I saw very soon the cost and the negative side of life to those who are called upon to do this ministry.

**MAT 8:21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.**

**MAT 8:22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead.**

This would be follower had a different problem. Excuses and worldly involvement. There are many good things that keep people from being dedicated followers of the Lord.. Boy Scouts, building churches, schools and spending time with your children and family. But these events, while necessary, can become consuming of your life and time with no time for personal meditation and reaching out to others. There is a command for public worship and keeping one day holy unto the Lord.

### **Luke's Version**

**LUK 9:57 And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.**

**LUK 9:58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.**

**LUK 9:59 And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.**

**LUK 9:60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.**

**LUK 9:61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.**

**LUK 9:62 And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.**

### **MISSION OF THE SEVENTY**

**LUK 10:1 After these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and**

**two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself would come.**

**LUK 10:2 Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest.**

This is not a parable. So, what is Jesus referring to? Preachers in Evangelical circles have made this a big thing about soul winning. There is a place for soul winning and this may have a small reference to it, but Jesus was not trying to build one large local congregation by sending His disciples to make church members out of everyone.

This was the beginning of the harvest referred to by the prophets.

**HOS 2:23 And I will sow her unto me in the earth; and I will have mercy upon her that had not obtained mercy; and I will say to them which were not my people, Thou art my people; and they shall say, Thou art my God.**

**HOS 1:5 And it shall come to pass at that day, that I will break the bow of Israel, in the valley of Jezreel (harvest).**

The whole idea behind the divorce of Israel from the covenant was to sow her among the Adam/Noah nations that there would be an increase in the number of Israel and some day be a harvest.

Christ came to pay the redemptive price and then start the harvest. In this passage in the New Testament, God is referring to the harvest of covenant Israelites that have now been produced by using Israel like leaven in a loaf of bread to leaven the meal of and enlarge the loaf.

The parable of the leaven in the meal also applies. The leaven of the Spirit and the Word within the people of God would spread among the nations (Adamic Nations of Gen 10. Did not include the African and Oriental and mixed races.) reaping great rewards for the Master.

The last part of verse 2 makes it clear that workers in the vineyard need to be called and sent and that calling and sending must be of God. We are to pray that God will call and send those workers into the harvest.

I believe that the days of the harvest are over and we are now in the øgleaningø. Many are entering the ministry, but few are called and sent of the Lord. While many may make professions, get baptized and join crowds and churches, few are being harvested to the truth in Christ. Few are being taught the commandments, statutes and judgments of the Lord.

**LUK 10:3 Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.**

**LUK 10:4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way.**

**LUK 10:5 And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house.**

**LUK 10:6 And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.**

**LUK 10:7 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.**

**LUK 10:8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you:**

**LUK 10:9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.**

**LUK 10:10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say,**

**LUK 10:11 Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.**

**LUK 10:12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.**

**LUK 10:13 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.**

**LUK 10:14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you.**

**LUK 10:15 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.**

**LUK 10:16 He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me.**

The Lord set out the rules of engagement here and they have been severely violated by the church in these last days.

First, we were to realize that we are the lambs and the enemy are the wolves. You can't convert wolves. Wolves eat sheep. Stay away from the wolves.

Second, don't make this a money making deal. Take what you have to have to survive and let God provide for you on the road.

Third, how to recognize where you are wanted.

A. Say, peace be to you and if God is there, your peace will be accepted. If not, you will be rebuffed and you will know. If that peace is there, stay and dwell, eat and live. You are worthy of your care. Eat what ever they give you. This means you may eat some unclean foods until they are taught. Heal the sick and tell them the kingdom of God is come to them.

B. If they don't receive you, go your way, shake the dust from your feet and tell them they have rejected the kingdom. Let God do the judging and condemning when He comes.

C. If they hear you, they hear me. If they reject you, they reject me and the one who sent me.

If we followed this formula, we would not have gone to many countries and we would come home from many countries today. Today we are not allowed to preach the gospel of the kingdom in most countries. We only preach personal and internal spiritual relations to God. This will not work in races who are not covenant people. If thousands of people in a black or oriental people truly became regenerated the evil governments would. The Roman government fell because it's

citizens became Christian. But Communism has flourished in all countries of other races despite the claim of millions of believers. This is not possible.

**LUK 10:17 And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.**

These early disciples were given power and opening for preaching. The result was powerfully successful.

**LUK 10:18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.**

This verse is most important. I believe that it must be studied in junction with

**REV 20:1 And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.**

**2 And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,**

**3 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more.....**

Jesus conquered Satan and bound his ability to deceive nations and prevent the gospel from being preached for almost 2000 years.

Our problem is that we see the power of Satan in the world today and we do not believe this assessment is true. But remember, that

**REV 20:3 .....and after that he must be loosed a little season.**

We are living in that little season. I have lived long enough that I remember the days before Satan gained a foot hold in this world. Before the 1960s, life was not filled with violence, crime, demons and evil spirits as it is today.

**LUK 10:19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.**

**LUK 10:20 Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.**

Please note that the serpents and scorpions were öspiritsö, not real snakes. Jesus called the Edomite Jews, öSerpentsö. Matt 23:33

**LUK 10:21 In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight.**

**LUK 10:22 All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him.**

Knowing God is always a spiritual revelation. Once again, only those who have spiritual discernment can know God or Jesus Christ.

**LUK 10:23** And he turned him unto his disciples, and said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see:

**LUK 10:24** For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

#### THE GOOD SAMARITAN

**LUK 10:25** And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

**LUK 10:26** He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou?

**LUK 10:27** And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself.

**LUK 10:28** And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

**LUK 10:29** But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

~The Good Samaritan

**LUK 10:30** And Jesus answering said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead.

**LUK 10:31** And by chance there came down a certain priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

**LUK 10:32** And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

**LUK 10:33** But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him,

**LUK 10:34** And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

**LUK 10:35** And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee.

**LUK 10:36** Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves?

**LUK 10:37** And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

The best known and most quoted of all the parables of Christ is about the good Samaritan, found in Luke 10: 30-35 .

This Parable is not only quoted in our pulpits but heard on our streets and in our work places. Anyone doing a "good deed" is often called a good Samaritan. Is this parable really a story about doing good deeds, teaching us that everyone is our neighbor and that we should be ready and willing to help anybody and everyone who is in trouble ---regardless of color, race or creed?



Sadly, in these days of racial hatred, when every effort is being made to destroy the white race, and destroy their white heritage, many in our pulpits feel "duty bound" to portray this "good Samaritan" as being from the colored races. Seldom are the white race cast in the role of the "good Samaritan," even though the white race has fulfilled this role throughout the last six thousand years. Think about this! In what condition would this world be without the white race?

The parable was given in reply to "a certain lawyer" who tried to tempt Christ and ensnare Him. (Luke 10:25-29) -----

*a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbor as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbor?"*

This lawyer was probably from the tribe of Levi, a zealous Jew or Pharisee. He probably studied the "law of Moses" and a great number of man made laws known as the "traditions of the Elders" and found in the Jewish Talmud. He, like the many today, tried to justify himself in God's eye by his good works. However, he was still apparently unsure of his "eternal life." He failed to understand, as Paul found later on, that carnal man cannot perfectly keep the law of God. (Rom. 3:10) There is none righteous, no, not one." Also (Psalms 14:1-3) "--- there is none that doeth good, no, not one." Righteousness is keeping the commandments of God. (Psalms 119:172) -----for all thy commandments are righteousness." Because of disobedience, which started with Adam, we all come short of "the glory of God." (Rom, 3:23-24) "For all have sinned and come short of the glory of God. Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:" We can only be justified, and freely, by the grace of Christ Jesus. Carnal man is not, and cannot be, justified by his own works or by keeping the law of God. (Rom. 3:20) "Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight:--" However, our Redeemer has made a way for the salvation of His people. (Jer. 31:31-34) "Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the Lord: But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the Lord, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the Lord: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more."

God had been a husband to Israel, but they, Israel, broke the covenant, or contract, through disobedience. The Hebrew word for husband used here in Jer. 31:32 is baal or bah-al (Strong's #1167). It means master or Lord, hence a husband - have dominion over - owner - captain - chief etc. Also included is the word dreamer. This is the word the "feminists" have apparently latched on to. However, to dream, or deep thought, can also be constructive. The Hebrew word for dream is Khaw-lam and means to bind firm-fly - to make or be caused, which means to produce - be in good liking and recover (Strong's #2492). Joseph had several constructive dreams. The dictionary calls a dream a succession of images or ideas present in the mind during sleep -- to think or conceive of something in a very remote way -- etc.

God is going to make a new covenant, in the days to come, and then take Israel back, and they shall again be His people. (V:34) They, Israel, will "teach no more" that every man is his



neighbor and every man his brother as they teach in the churches today. They won't be teaching all people to "Know the Lord" or deciding for themselves what is good or what is evil. God will forgive or cover their lawlessness and remember their sins no more. Talk about good news!! (Isa. 54:5-7) "For thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called. For the Lord hath called thee as a woman forsaken and grieved in spirit, and a wife of youth, when thou wast refused, saith thy God. For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee." Israel will again be restored as the wife of our Redeemer, who is Christ. Israel will be "cleaned up" and given a new, or renewed, spirit. (Ezek. 36:25-27) "Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them."

We must know and remember that Christ came only the House of Israel. (Matt 15:24) I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel. "Israel is called Gods People. (Matt. 2:6) for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel." Now the question is, "should we be helping our enemies, as most teach?" Should we be helping the enemies of God? (2 Chron. 19:2) 10 -----Shouldst thou help the ungodly, and love them that hate the Lord? therefore is wrath upon thee from before the Lord. "To help the enemies of God, invites the wrath of God. We have given the state of Israel most all that we have financially, and all kinds of support. Are they our neighbor? Most believe they are, but does Christ approve of all this carnage and slaughter, and those who are behind it? Think about it?

Actually, we are bringing these problems on ourselves. God is really causing it to happen because of our national disobedience. (Deut. 28:15) "But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee:" Then follows a great list of curses that have already fell on our nation until (V:45) we are nearly destroyed!! We have brought a great chastisement down on our nation, because of our disobedience.

Now, read again the parable of the Good Samaritan. Is this parable, in fact, about doing good deeds for your enemy as most all churches teach? Does this parable represent more than the traditional view? Is there more hidden in this symbolic story than the traditional explanation of doing good deeds and that everyone is our neighbor? Could there be another view?

Who was the man that was robbed, stripped and left half dead? Is this not the Adamic race-- the Israelites --Jacob? Just as the victim by the roadside, beaten, stripped and left to die, we as Israel, are dead in sin and without hope -- carnally speaking. Death entered into the world through Adam. (Rom. 5:12) "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:" Death by sin came through one man and that was Adam. Adam and Eve disobeyed God in the "garden" then tried to justify the sin by their own works. (Gen. 3:7) "---and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. " They had lost their covering, their immortality, which was conditional upon their obedience to God. They stood naked, mortal in their sin, and then tried to cover themselves by their own works. Only God can cover their sin and give them immortality. Their sentence was death. (Gen. 2:17) "But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die." They decided that they themselves knew good from evil, just as we, our government, has decided what is good or evil. They made their own

rules or laws and disobeyed God. Then came the great lie, "You shall not surely die". (Gen. 3:4-5) "And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil." Adam and Eve believed this lie, and the seeds of the immortal soul doctrine was sown, along with believing they could know good from evil. This, of course, leads to many other false doctrines like the rapture theory etc.

Adam, the Israelites, was stripped, beaten, wounded and left to die. He has been the victim of vicious attacks by the adversary in moral, religious, political, economic and every other spectrum imaginable. Actually, the white race has nearly been destroyed several times. Israel is in dire need of a Saviour to come and rescue them, and to bind up the wounds and hurts inflicted by this enemy. We have that promise. (Luke 21:28) "---your redemption draweth nigh. "

The Jericho road into Jerusalem was some twenty one miles. It was a dangerous route, notorious for murders and robberies. It became known as "The Pass of Blood." The rocky hills and the caves along the way made it easy for the roving bands of thieves. According to Josephus, many of these robbers had been workers in the Temple and dismissed by Herod. At one end of the road was Jerusalem, called the "City of Peace" where God had placed His name and was the site of the Holy Temple. Jericho was known as the "City of Roses or Palms." However, it was also a cursed city. (Joshua 6:26) "--Cursed be the man before the Lord, that riseth up and buildeth this city Jericho: .....

The rocky "Jericho road" to Jerusalem, which this "certain man" was traveling, symbolizes the journey of the Adamic race, or Israel, from the garden of Eden, and passes under the curse to the New Jerusalem and the Kingdom of God. The thieves are the followers of the devil. Just as there are those whose lives are devoted to serving Christ, so also there are those who are dedicated to doing evil. Christ calls these people the Synagogue of Satan, serpents or a race of vipers. (Rev. 2:9) " ----and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan."

Just as the thieves robbed, stripped and nearly killed the "certain man" traveling the Jericho road, so is Adam, the Israelites today, being robbed and beaten by a vast global conspiracy in an attempt to destroy Gods chosen seed. (Psalm 83:1-5) "Keep not thou silence, O God: hold not thy peace, and be not still, O God. For, lo, thine enemies make a tumult: and they that hate thee have lifted up the head. They have taken crafty counsel against thy people, and consulted against thy hidden ones. They have said, Come, and let us cut them off from being a nation; that the name of Israel may be no more in remembrance. For they have consulted together with one consent: they are confederate against thee:" The hidden ones are Israel. God has not only hid them from the world but has hidden them even from themselves. They believe themselves to be gentiles.

The priest naturally represents organized religion. Surely they would help this dying man. They should be the very first to help, and to bind up the wounds caused by the national moral, religious and economic attack. Sadly, this is not the case. The world and national council of churches have given the "third world" countries their own brand of perverted theology, which is an attempt to merge Christianity with Communism. They portray Christ as a revolutionist and his followers as terrorists and originators of civil disobedience. Whites are called "white devils" world wide. When our people have cried out for spiritual bread, the main line denominations offer them stones in the forms of modernism, humanism, ritualism Or some other "ism" part of what they call Judeo-Christianity. We have reached the point when there has come a "famine of the Word" in Israel. (Amos 8: 11) "Behold, the days come, saith the Lord God, that

I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the words of the Lord:" The true Word of God is nearly extinct, although the Word is here for every one to see -- or read, WhHe all of creation "groans" to be delivered, Israel, Gods chosen servant, lies wounded and near death, but the priest hurries to the other side of the road --- to Rome or to Moscow. (Ezek. 34:2-4; 10-16) "Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy, and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God unto the shepherds; Woe be to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! should not the shepherds feed the flocks? Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe you with the wool, ye kill them that are fed: but ye feed not the flock. The diseased have ye not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was sick, neither have ye bound up that which was broken, neither have ye brought again that which was driven away, neither have ye sought that which was lost; but with force and with cruelty have ye ruled them." (V:10-16) "Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against the shepherds; and I will require my flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the flock; neither shall the shepherds feed themselves anymore, for I will deliver my flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them. For thus saith the Lord God ' Behold, I, even I, will search my sheep, and seek them out. As a shepherd seeketh out his flock in the day that he is among his sheep that are scattered; so will I seek out my sheep, and will deliver them out of all places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. And I will bring them out from the people, and gather them from the countries, and WIR bring them to their own land, and feed them upon the mountains of Israel by the rivers, and in all the inhabited places of the country. I will feed them in good pasture, and upon the high mountains of Israel shall their fold be: there shall they lie in a good fold, and in a fat pasture shall they feed upon the mountains of Israel. I will feed my flock, and I will cause them to lie down, saith the Lord God. I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away, and will bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen that which was sick: but I will destroy the fat and the strong; I will feed them with judgment." Those "fat and strong" who have been feeding on the "flock" will be fed with judgment. Now we are getting a clue as to who is the Good Samaritan." Is He the Good Shepherd?

Then who is the Levite? During the time of Christ the Levites were concerned chiefly with the administration duties of the Temple. They represented a type of civil service during this era of the Jewish Pharisees. The lawyer was probably one of these Pharisaical Jews. So here in the parable was a Levite on his way to Jerusalem to perform his duties in the Temple. He is symbolic of civil administration, or of Government, which should guard and care for the people whom they represent --- especially when they are under attack. But just as the priest before him, he crossed over to the other side of the road, leaving the man to die. Like the true politician and "servants" in our government, he saw the man had been stripped and robbed, and there was nothing left for him to take, so he hurried on. Our cities have become concrete jungles where it is no longer safe anywhere. Our people live behind locked doors while muggers and such roam the streets. We live in a corrupt, depraved society where good is called evil and evil is called good. Our civil administrations have failed us miserably. They think only of themselves. They dont follow "righteous law," but make their own laws, to the detriment of our people. (Isa. 10: 1-3) "Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness which they have prescribed; To turn aside the needy from judgment, and to take away the right from the poor of my people, that widows may be their prey, and that they may rob the fatherless! And what will ye do in the day of visitation, and in the desolation which shall come from far? to whom will ye flee for help? and where will ye leave your glory?" Our people are being sorely oppressed by our civil authorities and God will deal with them. The dying man looked in vain for help from the

Levite, just as our people look in vain for help from our civil administrators and the politicians. (Ezek. 45:9) "Thus saith the Lord God; Let it suffice you, O princes of Israel: remove violence and spoil, and execute judgment and justice, take away your exactions from my people, saith the Lord God. Thankfully, righteous government will soon cover the entire world. (Rev. 11: 15) The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever." (Isa. 9:7) "Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end,---" (Luke 1:33) "And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end." Israel is wounded, helpless and near death, with no help from the religious or political realm, but there is a national awakening and a healing on its way.

Who is this Samaritan? By now it is apparent that this "Good Samaritan" is symbolic of Christ, who in His great love and compassion came to redeem, or to buy back, lost and dying Israel. However, the Samaritans were a mixed and mingled breed of people, corrupt through intermarriages and corrupt in their religious practices. Now why would Christ make the despised and hated Samaritan His symbolic role of Saviour and Redeemer of this dying man? Christ even told His disciples to stay out of the cities of the Samaritans. (Matt. 10:5) "----Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not:" There must be more to this than the thought of Christ also being hated and despised. Who were the Samaritans? (This is another study in itself) It seems the only really detailed biblical reference to their lineage is found in 2 Kings, especially chapter seventeen. The Israelites had settled in Samaria and over the years had several kings and rulers. In time however, they "went after the heathen that were round about," which is interracial fornication. This of course led to their serving heathen gods and their religious practices. This provoked the Lord to anger. God was so angry with Israel that He removed the ten tribes out of His sight ---- 2 Kings 17:15-18. This same God who led these Israelites out of Egypt, caused them to be carried captive out of Samaria into Assyria. God then brought men from other nations to repopulate the land of Samaria --- 2 Kings 17:24. The Hebrew word translated men in this verse is "Enosh." (Strong's #582) They were not Adamites, although many were of mixed blood. After these "heathen," Enosh people, were attacked by wild lions, they believed that the attacks came from the angry God of the displaced Israelites. After they spoke to the king, he then ordered that an Israelite priest be brought in to teach the people how "they should fear the Lord --- 2 Kings 17:25-28. Considering the fact that Israel themselves had gone into captivity because of their terrible sins and worship of Ashtoroth and Baal, it is not surprising that when the priest returned to teach them of his God, he found their religion the same as what he came to teach. They gave lip service to God but continued in their rituals and service to other gods --- and still do even today. It's all a multi-cultured multi-type faith.

In spite of being despised by the pharisees and Christ's instruction not to go into the cities of the Samaritans --- Matt. 10:5, how do we account for events where a Samaritan is not looked upon with disrespect? The one leper, out of ten, who returned to give Christ thanks was a Samaritan. (Luke 17:11-16) "And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off. And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed- And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, And fell down on his face at his feet, giving thanks: and he was a Samaritan." In the account at Jacob's well, the woman of Samaria claimed Jacob was her father. (John 4:5-12) "Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph.

Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour. There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. (For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.) Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep-. from whence then hast thou that living water? Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle?" Christ was talking to, and dealing with, an Israelite woman. There must have been two types of Samaritans. All the Jews living in Judea were not all from the tribe of Judah. They were all called Jews because of where they lived --- in Judea. There must have been a remnant of Israelites who survived the deportation to Assyria. (Isa. 17:6) "Yet gleaning grapes shall be left in it, as the shaking of an olive tree, two or three berries in the top of the uppermost bough, four or five in the outmost fruitful branches thereof, saith the Lord God of Israel." There was a little handful of true Israelites living in Samaria, and called Samaritans, who were not descended from the mixed multitude. They apparently had escaped the deportation --- the few grapes and berries. This woman at the well had made it clear she was descended from Jacob. She was an Israelite. Also, consider her life. Her experience is symbolic of the life of national Israel. (John 4:16-18) "Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband: For thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly." Israel, nationally, did have five symbolic husbands. First she was married to God at Mt. Sinai. She broke that covenant and was divorced. This marriage was followed symbolically by Assyria, Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece and finally Rome. (This is another study in itself) These Empires were symbolically known as Israel's lovers. Christ came to redeem Israel, and bring her back into the covenant relationship by His death. There were various types of Samaritans, just as there were different types of Jews. Location does not necessarily determine race.

What about the oil and the wine, and what about the bandage? They must have some symbolic meaning in the parable. These were used to cleanse and heal the wounds of the dying man. What could the wine represent? (Matt. 26:27-29) "And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. But, I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom." Wine was the symbol of Christ's atoning blood. The shedding of blood as an atonement for sins runs all through the scriptures from all the way back to Adam and Eve in the garden. After they sinned, they became aware of their mortality, or nakedness, and tried to cover themselves by their own works. (Gen. 3:7) "And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons." God did not accept this however, and covered them Himself (Gen. 3:21) "Unto Adam also and his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them." God will see to it that we depend on Him. (2 Tim. 1:9) "Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began," (Eph. 2:8-10) "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast." Our dependence is on God and not of

our selves. God Himself covered Adam and Eve with animal skins which had to mean the shedding of an innocent animals blood. All blood sacrifices in the Tabernacle and the Temple rituals were a shadow or a looking forward to the shedding of Christ's innocent blood for the redemption of Israel. (This another separate study) (Isaiah 53:5) "But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed." The death of Christ and His resurrection are, as Paul states, our only hope of being saved. (Heb. 9:22) "And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding blood is no remission. " Wine represents the blood of Christ --- which covers all our sins.

Oil throughout the scriptures is used as a symbol of the Holy Spirit. Oil is used to make light where it is dark. Therefore, oil, as the Holy Spirit, enlightens and guides us out of darkness into truth. Oil, as in this parable, is used for a sort of medication. Likewise, the Holy Spirit soothes and heals. It is our comforter. Oil was used to anoint Kings and Priests. Christ has anointed His people with the Holy Spirit to be Priests and Kings. We might add also that water and oil does not mix. Oil will always rise to the top. So in this carnal-spiritual mix in the flesh, the Holy Spirit will rise to the top. It will subdue and eventually conquer the flesh. Also, oil does not dry up in the summer nor freeze in the winter. The Holy Spirit also has great perseverance in our lives. Paul has said that through the Holy Spirit we are sealed unto the day of redemption. (Eph. 4:3 0) "And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption." It is also the earnest, or down payment, of our inheritance. (Eph. 1: 13 -14) "---in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory." The oil and the wine, just like the Holy Spirit and the blood, are linked together. We are beginning to see there is more to the parable than merely doing good deeds. The Good Samaritan, however, has actually performed a tremendous deed for us.

After pouring in the oil and wine, we must wonder how this Samaritan bound up the wounds.

What did he use? It must have been linen. It had to be linen! Linen is always symbolic of purity and righteousness. The Israelite priests were to be clothed in pure fine linen. The Hebrew word for linen is " shesh" (#8336 in Strongs). It means fine - drawn -bleached - white - silk. It must have been expensive the very best. In Revelation we find that fine linen is called the righteousness of the saints. (Rev. 19:8) "And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints." The Armies that follow Christ will also be clothed in fine white linen. (Rev. 19:14) "And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean." Is not this saying that the armies will be clothed in the righteousness of God --- His commandments? Our own self-righteousness are as filthy rags. (Isa. 64:6) "But we are all as an unclean thin& and our righteousnesses are as filthy rags,

We, and all of Israel, like the dying man need the righteousness, the law, of God.

The Samaritan then took the wounded man to an Inn, and took care of him. When he departed he gave the host, or the Inn keeper, two pence, or two coins. He then told the host to take of the man until He returned and then He would repay, or pay again, or reward him at that time. Following the symbolism, we see that the man, Israel, was placed in an assembly to fellowship with like believers, be spiritually fed, cared for and to grow strong in the faith and the grace of God. So then, symbolically, the Inn is the Church of God and the host are the overcon-fing body of Christ. Down through every generation there has been a remnant of Israel

"contending for the faith" and proclaiming the true gospel of the Kingdom of God.

Then what do the two coins represent? Since the Good Samaritan represents Christ, it seems reasonable to conclude the two pence, or coins, represent the Old and the New Testaments. The scriptures, both old and new testaments, are God breathed and contain all things necessary for doctrine, reproof, wisdom and instruction until Christ returns.

Then of course when Christ does return, He will repay or reward the Innkeeper. (Rev. 22:12) "And , behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be."

## **VISIT TO MARTHA AND MARY**

**~Martha and Mary**

**LUK 10:38** Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house.

**LUK 10:39** And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word.

**LUK 10:40** But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said,

Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

LUK 10:41 And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things:

LUK 10:42 But one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

The certain village was Bethany. The moral of this story is not to condemn Martha or to praise Mary. A church full of Marys would be no good to the world nor would a church full of Marthas.

The point was that under the circumstances, those being that Jesus was here for only a short time, then Mary was choosing the best option of her time to learn while she could. Jesus was more interested in teaching than eating.

Many times a woman will place her duties as a wife,, mother and host above that of meditation, prayer and learning the Word.

## **HEALING OF THE MAN BORN BLIND**

JOH 9:1 And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth.

JOH 9:2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?

JOH 9:3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

JOH 9:4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work.

JOH 9:5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

JOH 9:6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay,

JOH 9:7 And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

JOH 9:8 The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged?

JOH 9:9 Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.

JOH 9:10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

JOH 9:11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight.

JOH 9:12 Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

## **Controversy over the Man**

JOH 9:13 They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind.

JOH 9:14 And it was the Sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

JOH 9:15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

JOH 9:16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them.



JOH 9:17 They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

JOH 9:18 But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

JOH 9:19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see?

JOH 9:20 His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind:

JOH 9:21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself.

JOH 9:22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

JOH 9:23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

JOH 9:24 Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner.

JOH 9:25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.

JOH 9:26 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

JOH 9:27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?

JOH 9:28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples.

JOH 9:29 We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

JOH 9:30 The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

JOH 9:31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.

JOH 9:32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind.

JOH 9:33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

JOH 9:34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

~Jesus Affirms His Deity

JOH 9:35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?

JOH 9:36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

JOH 9:37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

JOH 9:38 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

JOH 9:39 And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind.

JOH 9:40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also?

JOH 9:41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say,

We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

## THE GOOD SHEPHERD

JOH 10:1 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

JOH 10:2 But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep.

JOH 10:3 To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

JOH 10:4 And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

JOH 10:5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

JOH 10:6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

JOH 10:7 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

JOH 10:8 All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.

JOH 10:9 I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

JOH 10:10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

JOH 10:11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.

JOH 10:12 But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

JOH 10:13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

JOH 10:14 I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

JOH 10:15 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

JOH 10:16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

JOH 10:17 Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again.

JOH 10:18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.

JOH 10:19 There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.

JOH 10:20 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

JOH 10:21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

## CHRIST AT FEAST OF DEDICATION (INSTITUTED IN MACCABEAN TIMES)

### ~Jesus Asserts His Deity

JOH 10:22 And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

**JOH 10:23** And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch.

**JOH 10:24** Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

**JOH 10:25** Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

**JOH 10:26** But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

**JOH 10:27** My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

**JOH 10:28** And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

**JOH 10:29** My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

**JOH 10:30** I and my Father are one.

**JOH 10:31** Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

**JOH 10:32** Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?

**JOH 10:33** The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

**JOH 10:34** Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?

**JOH 10:35** If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken;

**JOH 10:36** Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?

**JOH 10:37** If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

**JOH 10:38** But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.

#### **FROM THE FEAST TO HIS WITHDRAWAL**

#### **WITHDRAWAL FROM JERUSALEM TO BETHANY BEYOND JORDAN**

**JOH 10:39** Therefore they sought again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand,

**JOH 10:40** And went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John at first baptized; and there he abode.

**JOH 10:41** And many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man were true.

**JOH 10:42** And many believed on him there.

#### **DISCOURSE**

#### **PRAYER**

#### **~Instruction about Prayer**

**LUK 11:1** And it came to pass, that, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

**LUK 11:2** And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth.

**LUK 11:3** Give us day by day our daily bread.

**LUK 11:4** And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us.

And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.

LUK 11:5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, **Friend, lend me three loaves;**

LUK 11:6 For a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?

LUK 11:7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.

LUK 11:8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

LUK 11:9 And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

LUK 11:10 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

LUK 11:11 If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent?

LUK 11:12 Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion?

LUK 11:13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

#### **DEMON CAST OUT.**

#### **VARIOUS TOPICS DISCUSSED**

##### **~Pharisees' Blasphemy**

LUK 11:14 And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake; and the people wondered.

LUK 11:15 But some of them said, He casteth out devils through Beelzebub the chief of the devils.

LUK 11:16 And others, tempting him, sought of him a sign from heaven.

LUK 11:17 But he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and a house divided against a house falleth.

LUK 11:18 If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.

LUK 11:19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.

LUK 11:20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.

LUK 11:21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:

LUK 11:22 But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

LUK 11:23 He that is not with me is against me: and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

LUK 11:24 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out.

LUK 11:25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.

*LUK 11:26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first.*

*LUK 11:27 And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.*

*LUK 11:28 But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.*

### **~The Sign of Jonah**

**LUK 11:29** And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation: they seek a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet.

**LUK 11:30** For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

**LUK 11:31** The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

**LUK 11:32** The men of Nineve shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.

**LUK 11:33** No man, when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light.

**LUK 11:34** The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when thine eye is evil, thy body also is full of darkness.

**LUK 11:35** Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness.

**LUK 11:36** If thy whole body therefore be full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

Again, God is speaking to the defectiveness of the Pharisees (Edom Esau) to see or understand truth. Jesus was the man, His works were the candle lit, He did it openly on a hill so to speak for all to see. Those who had good eyes, meaning without spiritual defect, saw and believed. Those who had darkness or defective eyes had no ability to see.

### **WOES AGAINST THE PHARISEES**

**LUK 11:37** And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat.

**LUK 11:38** And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.

**LUK 11:39** And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness.

**LUK 11:40** Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without make that which is within also?

**LUK 11:41** But rather give alms of such things as ye have; and, behold, all things are clean unto you.

**LUK 11:42** But woe unto you, Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

**LUK 11:43** Woe unto you, Pharisees! for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues,

and greetings in the markets.

LUK 11:44 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over them are not aware of them.

LUK 11:45 Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying thou reproachest us also.

LUK 11:46 And he said, Woe unto you also, ye lawyers! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

LUK 11:47 Woe unto you! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

LUK 11:48 Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

LUK 11:49 Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they shall slay and persecute:

LUK 11:50 That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation;

LUK 11:51 From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation.

LUK 11:52 Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.

LUK 11:53 And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things:

LUK 11:54 Laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

## **TALKS TO THE DISCIPLES GOD'S CARE**

LUK 12:1 In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.

LUK 12:2 For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.

LUK 12:3 Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.

LUK 12:4 And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do.

LUK 12:5 But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

LUK 12:6 Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

LUK 12:7 But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows.

LUK 12:8 Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God:

LUK 12:9 But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God.

**LUK 12:10** And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven.

**LUK 12:11** And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:

**LUK 12:12** For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

## **PARABLE OF THE RICH FOOL**

### **~Covetousness Denounced**

**LUK 12:13** And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.

**LUK 12:14** And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you?

**LUK 12:15** And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

**LUK 12:16** And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully:

**LUK 12:17** And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

**LUK 12:18** And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.

**LUK 12:19** And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

**LUK 12:20** But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?

**LUK 12:21** So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God

## **TRUST IN GOD'S PROVIDENCE**

**LUK 12:47** And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

**LUK 12:48** But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

## **CHRIST TO CAUSE DIVISION**

### **CHIDES FOR FAILURE TO INTERPRET SIGNS**

#### **~Christ Divides Men**

**LUK 12:49** I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled?

**LUK 12:50** But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!

**LUK 12:51** Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division:

**LUK 12:52** For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three.

**LUK 12:53** The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

**LUK 12:54** And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it is.

**LUK 12:55** And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to pass.

**LUK 12:56** Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky and of the earth; but how is it that ye do not discern this time?

**LUK 12:57** Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?

**LUK 12:58** When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison.

**LUK 12:59** I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

## **GALILEAN'S ARE SLAIN BY PILATE**

### **~Call to Repent**

**LUK 13:1** There were present at that season some that told him of the Galilaeans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

**LUK 13:2** And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galilaeans were sinners above all the Galilaeans, because they suffered such things?

**LUK 13:3** I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

**LUK 13:4** Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

**LUK 13:5** I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

## **PARABLE OF BARREN FIG TREE**

**LUK 13:6** He spake also this parable; A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

**LUK 13:7** Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground?

**LUK 13:8** And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

**LUK 13:9** And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

## **JESUS HEALS WOMAN ON THE SABBATH**

### **~Healing on the Sabbath**

**LUK 13:10** And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

**LUK 13:11** And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself.

**LUK 13:12** And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

**LUK 13:13** And he laid his hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and



glorified God.

LUK 13:14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on.

LUK 12:23 The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment.

LUK 12:24 Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls?

LUK 12:25 And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit?

LUK 12:26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest?

LUK 12:27 Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.

LUK 12:28 If then God so clothe the grass, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the oven; how much more will he clothe you, O ye of little faith?

LUK 12:29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind.

LUK 12:30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things.

LUK 12:31 But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you.

LUK 12:32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

LUK 12:33 Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth.

LUK 12:34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

## PARABLE OF WATCHFUL SERVANTS

~Be in Readiness

LUK 12:35 Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burning;

LUK 12:36 And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

LUK 12:37 Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

LUK 12:38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants.

LUK 12:39 And this know, that if the goodman of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

LUK 12:40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

LUK 12:41 Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

**LUK 12:42** And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

**LUK 12:43** Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

**LUK 12:44** Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

**LUK 12:45** But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken;

**LUK 12:46** The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

cause that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day.

**LUK 13:15** The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

**LUK 13:16** And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?

**LUK 13:17** And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

#### **MUSTARD SEED.**

**LUK 13:18** Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

**LUK 13:19** It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden; and it grew, and waxed a great tree; and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

#### **PARABLE OF THE LEAVEN**

**LUK 13:20** And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God?

**LUK 13:21** It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

#### **FEW SAVED**

#### **BROAD AND NARROW PATH.**

#### **~Teaching in the Villages**

**LUK 13:22** And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

**LUK 13:23** Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them,

**LUK 13:24** Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

**LUK 13:25** When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are:

**LUK 13:26** Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou

hast taught in our streets.

LUK 13:27 But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.

LUK 13:28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out.

LUK 13:29 And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.

LUK 13:30 And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

#### REPLY TO HEROD'S THREAT

LUK 13:31 The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.

LUK 13:32 And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

LUK 13:33 Nevertheless I must walk to day, and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

LUK 13:34 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not!

LUK 13:35 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

#### HEALING MAN WITH DROPSY ON SABBATH

*LUK 14:1 And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath day, that they watched him.*

*LUK 14:2 And, behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy.*

*LUK 14:3 And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day?*

*LUK 14:4 And they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go;*

*LUK 14:5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath day?*

*LUK 14:6 And they could not answer him again to these things.*

#### HUMILITY USING: SEATING AT WEDDING

*LUK 14:7 And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them.*

*LUK 14:8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him;*

*LUK 14:9 And he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and*

*thou begin with shame to take the lowest room.*

*LUK 14:10 But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.*

*LUK 14:11 For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.*

### **INVITATION LIST**

*LUK 14:12 Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee.*

*LUK 14:13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind:*

*LUK 14:14 And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.*

### **THE GREAT SUPPER**

*LUK 14:15 And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.*

*~Parable of the Dinner*

*LUK 14:16 Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many:*

*LUK 14:17 And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are now ready.*

*LUK 14:18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused.*

*LUK 14:19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused.*

*LUK 14:20 And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.*

*LUK 14:21 So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.*

*LUK 14:22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.*

*LUK 14:23 And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled.*

*LUK 14:24 For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.*

### **JESUS WARNS OF COST TO FOLLOW HIM**

*~Discipleship Tested*

*LUK 14:25 And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them,*

*LUK 14:26 If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.*

*LUK 14:27 And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.*

*LUK 14:28 For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth*

*the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it?*

*LUK 14:29 Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it begin to mock him,*

*LUK 14:30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.*

*LUK 14:31 Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?*

*LUK 14:32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.*

*LUK 14:33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.*

*LUK 14:34 Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned?*

*LUK 14:35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; but men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.*

### **THE LOST SHEEP**

*LUK 15:1 Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him.*

*LUK 15:2 And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.*

*LUK 15:3 And he spake this parable unto them, saying,*

*LUK 15:4 What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it?*

*LUK 15:5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing.*

*LUK 15:6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost.*

*LUK 15:7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.*

### **~The Lost Coin**

*LUK 15:8 Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it?*

*LUK 15:9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost.*

*LUK 15:10 Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.*

### **~The Prodigal Son**

*LUK 15:11 And he said, A certain man had two sons:*

*LUK 15:12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living.*

*LUK 15:13 And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.*

*LUK 15:14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want.*

*LUK 15:15 And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.*

*LUK 15:16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.*

*LUK 15:17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger!*

*LUK 15:18 I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,*

*LUK 15:19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.*

*LUK 15:20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.*

*LUK 15:21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.*

*LUK 15:22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet:*

*LUK 15:23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry:*

*LUK 15:24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.*

*LUK 15:25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing.*

*LUK 15:26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.*

*LUK 15:27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.*

*LUK 15:28 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.*

*LUK 15:29 And he answering said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:*

*LUK 15:30 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.*

*LUK 15:31 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.*

*LUK 15:32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.*

### *~The Unrighteous Steward*

*LUK 16:1 And he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods.*

*LUK 16:2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward.*

*LUK 16:3 Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed.*

*LUK 16:4 I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.*

*LUK 16:5 So he called every one of his lord's debtors unto him, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord?*

*LUK 16:6 And he said, An hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty.*

*LUK 16:7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore.*

*LUK 16:8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light.*

*LUK 16:9 And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.*

*LUK 16:10 He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much.*

*LUK 16:11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?*

*LUK 16:12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?*

*LUK 16:13 No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.*

*LUK 16:14 And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.*

*LUK 16:15 And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God.*

*LUK 16:16 The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it.*

*LUK 16:17 And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail.*

*LUK 16:18 Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband committeth adultery.*

### *~The Rich Man and Lazarus*

*LUK 16:19 There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day:*

*LUK 16:20 And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,*

*LUK 16:21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.*

*LUK 16:22 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;*

*LUK 16:23 And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.*

*LUK 16:24 And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.*

*LUK 16:25 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.*

*LUK 16:26 And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come*

*from thence.*

***LUK 16:27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house:***

***LUK 16:28 For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.***

Judah had five brethren, they are all the six sons of Jacob and Leah.

***LUK 16:29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.***

***LUK 16:30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.***

***LUK 16:31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.***

### **Offenses by the Wicked**

***LUK 17:1 Then said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but woe unto him, through whom they come!***

***LUK 17:2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones.***

The word öoffencesö is better understood as traps. The idea is that of one person setting a trap for another to purposefully do harm or embarrassment to them or their possessions. God has warned us that these things will happen. We cannot stop them. But those who evilly plot against the righteous children of God and set traps for them, would do better if they had been executed by millstone.

### **Trespasses by a Brother**

***LUK 17:3 Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.***

***LUK 17:4 And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.***

***LUK 17:5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.***

***LUK 17:6 And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you.***

The plots of the wicked are one thing, but the trespasses of a brother in Christ is another. Trespass means, öto violateö. If we violate the law of God, it is called a trespass against God. The boundaries of the individual, his family and possessions are all set by the law of God. We some times call them rights. For example, if I own a piece of property, my property lines become the boundaries of all my rights related to that property. If you walk on my property, harm anything of mine on my property or cause injury to my property or anything on it, you have trespassed against me as outlined by Bible law. Likewise, all remedies to those violations are listed in the law of God.

To take this a little further, my thoughts, beliefs and freedoms are also my property with Bible law limits. If you trespass against them, you are to repent, meaning you are sorry and will not do that again. If you so stipulate, then I am bound to forgive you. You may violate another area of my life and trespass again. If you repent, I am to forgive. This was to be an endless process between Christians, why, because it is that way between us and our God.

God did not just forgive our sins of the past and then we are to be perfect. We are to try to be perfect as



our father, but we cannot. We continue to sin or trespass against God. Should He not forgive us at some point? If so, then we are lost and without hope. He keeps on forgiving.

We are to keep on forgiving. Why, because the church, the family and our relationship with each other in a neighborhood, community or nation cannot function without it.

The disciples saw the difficulty of this and asked Christ to increase their faith.

His response was that if they had even a mustard seed sized faith, they could say to their bitterness and anger and other emotions toward that trespassing brother, to be plucked up and removed. He used the Sycamore tree as an example of the ease of removing even the most difficult things.

### **Unprofitable Servant**

***LUK 17:7 But which of you, having a servant plowing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat?***

***LUK 17:8 And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink?***

***LUK 17:9 Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not.***

***LUK 17:10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.***

The next thing our Lord taught us was that we should not dwell on rewards and status and other means of reward in the kingdom. After all, if we do all that is asked of us, are we not just unworthy servants? We owe God everything, we are duty bound to obey for no payment, but for obedience sake.

There will be rewards, but they will be given by the Lord as He so decides.

### **~The Death and Resurrection of Lazarus**

***JOH 11:1 Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.***

***JOH 11:2 (It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.)***

***JOH 11:3 Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.***

***JOH 11:4 When Jesus heard that, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.***

***JOH 11:5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.***

***JOH 11:6 When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was.***

***JOH 11:7 Then after that saith he to his disciples, Let us go into Judaea again.***

***JOH 11:8 His disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again?***

***JOH 11:9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.***

***JOH 11:10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.***

***JOH 11:11 These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.***

***JOH 11:12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.***

***JOH 11:13 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.***

***JOH 11:14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.***

*JOH 11:15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him.*

*JOH 11:16 Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellowdisciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.*

*JOH 11:17 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the grave four days already.*

*JOH 11:18 Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off:*

*JOH 11:19 And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.*

*JOH 11:20 Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat still in the house.*

*JOH 11:21 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.*

*JOH 11:22 But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.*

*JOH 11:23 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again.*

*JOH 11:24 Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.*

*JOH 11:25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:*

*JOH 11:26 And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?*

*JOH 11:27 She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.*

*JOH 11:28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.*

*JOH 11:29 As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him.*

*JOH 11:30 Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.*

*JOH 11:31 The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.*

*JOH 11:32 Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.*

*JOH 11:33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled.*

*JOH 11:34 And said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see.*

*JOH 11:35 Jesus wept.*

*JOH 11:36 Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him!*

*JOH 11:37 And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died?*

*JOH 11:38 Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.*

*JOH 11:39 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.*

*JOH 11:40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God?*

*JOH 11:41 Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me.*

*JOH 11:42 And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.*

*JOH 11:43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.*

*JOH 11:44 And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.*

*JOH 11:45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him.*

*JOH 11:46 But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.*

### *Jesus Withdraws to Ephraim*

*JOH 11:47 Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles.*

*JOH 11:48 If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation.*

*JOH 11:49 And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all,*

*JOH 11:50 Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.*

*JOH 11:51 And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation;*

*JOH 11:52 And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad.*

*JOH 11:53 Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.*

*JOH 11:54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.*

*From the Withdrawal to His return to Jerusalem*

### *The ten lepers Healed*

*LUK 17:11 And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.*

*LUK 17:12 And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off:*

*LUK 17:13 And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us.*

*LUK 17:14 And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed.*

*LUK 17:15 And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God,*

*LUK 17:16 And fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan.*

*LUK 17:17 And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?*

*LUK 17:18 There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.*

*LUK 17:19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.*

**Our Lord Teaches**  
**Discourse on the Coming of the promised Kingdom**

*LUK 17:20 And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation:*

*LUK 17:21 Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.*

*LUK 17:22 And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.*

*LUK 17:23 And they shall say to you, See here; or, see there: go not after them, nor follow them.*

*LUK 17:24 For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day.*

*LUK 17:25 But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.*

*LUK 17:26 And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.*

*LUK 17:27 They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all.*

*LUK 17:28 Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded;*

*LUK 17:29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all.*

*LUK 17:30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.*

*LUK 17:31 In that day, he which shall be upon the housetop, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.*

*LUK 17:32 Remember Lot's wife.*

*LUK 17:33 Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it.*

*LUK 17:34 I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left.*

*LUK 17:35 Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left.*

*LUK 17:36 Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.*

*LUK 17:37 And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.*

**The Unjust Judge and Nagging Wodow**

*LUK 18:1 And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint;*

*LUK 18:2 Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man:*

*LUK 18:3 And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.*

*LUK 18:4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man;*

*LUK 18:5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.*

*LUK 18:6 And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith.*

*LUK 18:7 And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?*

*LUK 18:8 I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?*

### *The praying Pharisee and Publican*

*LUK 18:9 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others:*

*LUK 18:10 Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.*

*LUK 18:11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.*

*LUK 18:12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.*

*LUK 18:13 And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.*

*LUK 18:14 I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.*

### *Concerning Divorce*

*MAT 19:1 And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judaea beyond Jordan;*

*MAT 19:2 And great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.*

*MAT 19:3 The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?*

*MAT 19:4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female,*

*MAT 19:5 And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh?*

*MAT 19:6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.*

*MAT 19:7 They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?*

*MAT 19:8 He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.*

*MAT 19:9 And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.*

*MAT 19:10 His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.*

*MAT 19:11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is*

given.

**MAT 19:12** *For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.*

Mark on Jesus on Divorce

**MAR 10:1** *And he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judaea by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.*

**MAR 10:2** *And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.*

**MAR 10:3** *And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you?*

**MAR 10:4** *And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.*

**MAR 10:5** *And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept.*

**MAR 10:6** *But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female.*

**MAR 10:7** *For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife;*

**MAR 10:8** *And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh.*

**MAR 10:9** *What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.*

**MAR 10:10** *And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter.*

**MAR 10:11** *And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her.*

**MAR 10:12** *And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.*

### **Christ Blesses Little Children**

*~Jesus Blesses Little Children*

**MAT 19:13** *Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.*

**MAT 19:14** *But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.*

*~Jesus Blesses Little Children*

**MAR 10:13** *And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.*

**MAR 10:14** *But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.*

**MAR 10:15** *Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.*

**MAR 10:16** *And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.*

**LUK 18:15** *And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.*

**LUK 18:16** *But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.*

**LUK 18:17** *Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little*

*child shall in no wise enter therein.*

### **The Rich Young Ruler**

*~The Rich Young Ruler*

*MAT 19:16 And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?*

*MAT 19:17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.*

*MAT 19:18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,*

*MAT 19:19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.*

*MAT 19:20 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?*

*MAT 19:21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.*

*MAT 19:22 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.*

*MAT 19:23 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.*

*MAT 19:24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.*

*MAT 19:25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?*

*MAT 19:26 But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.*

*~The Disciples' Reward*

*MAT 19:27 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?*

*MAT 19:28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.*

*MAT 19:29 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life.*

*MAT 19:30 But many that are first shall be last; and the last shall be first.*

*~The Rich Young Ruler*

*MAR 10:17 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?*

*MAR 10:18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God.*

*MAR 10:19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.*

*MAR 10:20 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my*

youth.

**MAR 10:21** Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

**MAR 10:22** And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

**MAR 10:23** And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

**MAR 10:24** And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

**MAR 10:25** It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

**MAR 10:26** And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

**MAR 10:27** And Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

**MAR 10:28** Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

**MAR 10:29** And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's,

**MAR 10:30** But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.

**MAR 10:31** But many that are first shall be last; and the last first.

*~The Rich Young Ruler*

**LUK 18:18** And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

**LUK 18:19** And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good, save one, that is, God.

**LUK 18:20** Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother.

**LUK 18:21** And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up.

**LUK 18:22** Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me.

**LUK 18:23** And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich.

**LUK 18:24** And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

**LUK 18:25** For it is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

**LUK 18:26** And they that heard it said, Who then can be saved?

**LUK 18:27** And he said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.

**LUK 18:28** Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee.

**LUK 18:29** And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left



*house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake,  
LUK 18:30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.*

### **Parable of Laborers in Vineyard**

*MAT 20:1 For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.*

*MAT 20:2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.*

*MAT 20:3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace,*

*MAT 20:4 And said unto them; Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way.*

*MAT 20:5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.*

*MAT 20:6 And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?*

*MAT 20:7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.*

*MAT 20:8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.*

*MAT 20:9 And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.*

*MAT 20:10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny.*

*MAT 20:11 And when they had received it, they murmured against the goodman of the house,*

*MAT 20:12 Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day.*

*MAT 20:13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny?*

*MAT 20:14 Take that thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee.*

*MAT 20:15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good?*

*MAT 20:16 So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.*

### **Christ Foretells of Crucifixion**

*MAT 20:17 And Jesus going up to Jerusalem took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,*

*MAT 20:18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death,*

*MAT 20:19 And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify him: and the third day he shall rise again.*

*~Jesus' Sufferings Foretold*

*MAR 10:32 And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before them:*

*and they were amazed; and as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,*

*MAR 10:33 Saying, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles:*

*MAR 10:34 And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him: and the third day he shall rise again.*

*LUK 18:31 Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.*

*LUK 18:32 For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on:*

*LUK 18:33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death: and the third day he shall rise again.*

*LUK 18:34 And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.*

### *Ambitions of James and John*

*MAT 20:20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him.*

*MAT 20:21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom.*

*MAT 20:22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able.*

*MAT 20:23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.*

*MAT 20:24 And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.*

*MAT 20:25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.*

*MAT 20:26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister;*

*MAT 20:27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant:*

*MAT 20:28 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.*

*MAR 10:35 And James and John, the sons of Zebedee, come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall desire.*

*MAR 10:36 And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you?*

*MAR 10:37 They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.*

*MAR 10:38 But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I*

*drink of? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?*

*MAR 10:39 And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized withal shall ye be baptized:*

*MAR 10:40 But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give; but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared.*

*MAR 10:41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.*

*MAR 10:42 But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them.*

*MAR 10:43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:*

*MAR 10:44 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.*

*MAR 10:45 For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.*

### **Blind Bartimaeus and Friend are Healed**

*MAT 20:29 And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.*

*MAT 20:30 And, behold, two blind men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.*

*MAT 20:31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.*

*MAT 20:32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?*

*MAT 20:33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.*

*MAT 20:34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.*

*~Bartimaeus Receives His Sight*

*MAR 10:46 And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples and a great number of people, blind Bartimaeus, the son of Timaeus, sat by the highway side begging.*

*MAR 10:47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.*

*MAR 10:48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more a great deal, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.*

*MAR 10:49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called. And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee.*

*MAR 10:50 And he, casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.*

*MAR 10:51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blind man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.*

*MAR 10:52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.*

*~Bartimaeus Receives Sight*

*LUK 18:35 And it came to pass, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the way side begging:*

***LUK 18:36 And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.***  
***LUK 18:37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.***  
***LUK 18:38 And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.***  
***LUK 18:39 And they which went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.***  
***LUK 18:40 And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,***  
***LUK 18:41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.***  
***LUK 18:42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee.***  
***LUK 18:43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.***

### **Conversion of Zaccheus**

~Zaccheus Converted

***LUK 19:1 And Jesus entered and passed through Jericho.***  
***LUK 19:2 And, behold, there was a man named Zacchaeus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich.***  
***LUK 19:3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature.***  
***LUK 19:4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way.***  
***LUK 19:5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him, Zacchaeus, make haste, and come down; for to day I must abide at thy house.***  
***LUK 19:6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.***  
***LUK 19:7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.***  
***LUK 19:8 And Zacchaeus stood, and said unto the Lord: Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.***  
***LUK 19:9 And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a son of Abraham.***  
***LUK 19:10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.***

### **Parable of The Pounds**

~Parable of Money Usage

***LUK 19:11 And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.***  
***LUK 19:12 He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.***  
***LUK 19:13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.***  
***LUK 19:14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.***  
***LUK 19:15 And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.***

LUK 19:16 *Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.*  
 LUK 19:17 *And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.*  
 LUK 19:18 *And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.*  
 LUK 19:19 *And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.*  
 LUK 19:20 *And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin:*  
 LUK 19:21 *For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.*  
 LUK 19:22 *And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow:*  
 LUK 19:23 *Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?*  
 LUK 19:24 *And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.*  
 LUK 19:25 *(And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)*  
 LUK 19:26 *For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.*  
 LUK 19:27 *But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.*  
 ~Triumphal Entry  
 LUK 19:28 *And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.*

## *Last Week*

### Jesus Arrives at Bethany

JOH 11:55 *And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves.*  
 JOH 11:56 *Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?*  
 JOH 11:57 *Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.*  
  
 JOH 12:1 *Then Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.*  
 JOH 12:2 *There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.*  
 JOH 12:3 *Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.*  
 JOH 12:4 *Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him,*  
 JOH 12:5 *Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?*  
 JOH 12:6 *This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the*

*bag, and bare what was put therein.*

*JOH 12:7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying hath she kept this.*

*JOH 12:8 For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.*

*JOH 12:9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.*

*JOH 12:10 But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death;*

*JOH 12:11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.*

### *Jesus Anointed By Mary*

*JOH 12:2 There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.*

*JOH 12:3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.*

*JOH 12:4 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him,*

*JOH 12:5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?*

*JOH 12:6 This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.*

*JOH 12:7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying hath she kept this.*

*JOH 12:8 For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.*

### *Triumphal Entry*

#### *~The Triumphal Entry*

*MAT 21:1 And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,*

*MAT 21:2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.*

*MAT 21:3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.*

*MAT 21:4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,*

*MAT 21:5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.*

*MAT 21:6 And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them,*

*MAT 21:7 And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.*

*MAT 21:8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.*

*MAT 21:9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.*

*MAT 21:10 And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?*

*MAT 21:11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.*

~The Triumphal Entry

*MAR 11:1 And when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,*

*MAR 11:2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you: and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose him, and bring him.*

*MAR 11:3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will send him hither.*

*MAR 11:4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without in a place where two ways met; and they loose him.*

*MAR 11:5 And certain of them that stood there said unto them, What do ye, loosing the colt?*

*MAR 11:6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.*

*MAR 11:7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him; and he sat upon him.*

*MAR 11:8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches off the trees, and strawed them in the way.*

*MAR 11:9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna; Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord:*

*MAR 11:10 Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest.*

*MAR 11:11 And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple: and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.*

*LUK 19:29 And it came to pass, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples,*

*LUK 19:30 Saying, Go ye into the village over against you; in the which at your entering ye shall find a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring him hither.*

*LUK 19:31 And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose him? thus shall ye say unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.*

*LUK 19:32 And they that were sent went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.*

*LUK 19:33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt?*

*LUK 19:34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.*

*LUK 19:35 And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.*

*LUK 19:36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.*

*LUK 19:37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen;*

*LUK 19:38 Saying, Blessed be the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.*

*LUK 19:39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.*

*LUK 19:40 And he answered and said unto them, I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.*

*LUK 19:41 And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,*

*LUK 19:42* Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

*LUK 19:43* For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side,

*LUK 19:44* And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

#### ~Jesus Enters Jerusalem

*JOH 12:12* On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

*JOH 12:13* Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

*JOH 12:14* And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written,

*JOH 12:15* Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt.

*JOH 12:16* These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

*JOH 12:17* The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

*JOH 12:18* For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

*JOH 12:19* The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

### Cursing the Fig Tree

#### ~The Barren Fig Tree

*MAT 21:18* Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered.

*MAT 21:19* And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig tree withered away.

*MAR 11:12* And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry:

*MAR 11:13* And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet.

*MAR 11:14* And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

### Fig Tree Withers

*MAT 21:20* And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig tree withered away!

*MAT 21:21* Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig tree, but also if ye shall say unto



*this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done.*

*MAT 21:22 And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.*

*MAR 11:20 And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots.*

*MAR 11:21 And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst is withered away.*

*MAR 11:22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God.*

*MAR 11:23 For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.*

*MAR 11:24 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.*

*MAR 11:25 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.*

*MAR 11:26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.*

**ENDED VISTA WED JULY 6TH STUDY HERE**

### **Christ's Authority Challenged**

#### **~Authority Challenged**

*MAT 21:23 And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?*

*MAT 21:24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.*

*MAT 21:25 The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?*

*MAT 21:26 But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet.*

*MAT 21:27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.*

#### **~Jesus' Authority Questioned**

*MAR 11:27 And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders,*

*MAR 11:28 And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?*

Particularly the expulsion of the money changers

*MAR 11:29 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.*

*MAR 11:30 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.*

*MAR 11:31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him?*

*MAR 11:32 But if we shall say, Of men; they feared the people: for all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.*

*MAR 11:33 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.*

Christianity has always been confrontational.

Jesus does not accept those who refuse to take a stand on the issues.

Fence straddlers.

Those who want to be friends on both sides.

### ~Jesus' Authority Questioned

*LUK 20:1 And it came to pass, that on one of those days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the scribes came upon him with the elders,*

*LUK 20:2 And spake unto him, saying, Tell us, by what authority doest thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?*

*LUK 20:3 And he answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing; and answer me:*

*LUK 20:4 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men?*

*LUK 20:5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then believed ye him not?*

*LUK 20:6 But and if we say, Of men; all the people will stone us: for they be persuaded that John was a prophet.*

*LUK 20:7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence it was.*

*LUK 20:8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.*

## *Parables*

### Two Sons

#### ~Parable of Two Sons

*MAT 21:28 But what think ye? A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard.*

*MAT 21:29 He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.*

*MAT 21:30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not.*

*MAT 21:31 Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.*

*MAT 21:32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.*

### Wicked Tenants of The Vineyard

#### ~Parable of the Landowner

*MAT 21:33 Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a*

*vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country:*

*MAT 21:34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.*

*MAT 21:35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.*

*MAT 21:36 Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise.*

*MAT 21:37 But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.*

*MAT 21:38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.*

*MAT 21:39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.*

*MAT 21:40 When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?*

*MAT 21:41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.*

*MAT 21:42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?*

*MAT 21:43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.*

*MAT 21:44 And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.*

*MAT 21:45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.*

*MAT 21:46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.*

### ~Parable of the Wicked Husbandmen

[START WED AUG 3, 2005](#)

*MAR 12:1 And he began to speak unto them by parables. A certain man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a place for the winefat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.*

Certain man = God

Planted a Vineyard = Israel, covenant people

### Isreal

Hebrew He will rule as God, *sarah* = to prevail, *el* = God,

Greek He shall rule as God, Christians ô the Israel of God,

Israel, Noun., Refers to the people of Jacob/Israel descent

Israel, adjective, refers to a description of the Character of a people.

Adam, the first Israel of God

Seth, Noah, Shem, Abraham,  
We are His Israel people today

Hedge =

*JOB 1:10 Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side? thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land.*

*PRO 15:19 The way of the slothful man is as an hedge of thorns: but the way of the righteous is made plain.*

*ECC 10:8 He that diggeth a pit shall fall into it; and whoso breaketh an hedge, a serpent shall bite him.*

*ISA 5:5 And now go to; I will tell you what I will do to my vineyard: I will take away the hedge thereof, and it shall be eaten up; and break down the wall thereof, and it shall be trodden down:*

*EZE 13:5 Ye have not gone up into the gaps, neither made up the hedge for the house of Israel to stand in the battle in the day of the LORD.*

*EZE 22:30 And I sought for a man among them, that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before me for the land, that I should not destroy it: but I found none.*

*HOS 2:6 Therefore, behold, I will hedge up thy way with thorns, and make a wall, that she shall not find her paths.*

Hedge is a fence

Can protect

Or can prevent re-entry.

Winevat = Blessing, prosperity (Cannot compare today's wine with Bible wine)

Tower = Defense, fortified

Husbandmen = 13 tribes, then the three tribes, Judah

*MAR 12:2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.*

Servant = prophets

Fruit = Submission, worship, obedience, judgment of & Gospel to the nations

*MAR 12:3 And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him away empty.*

The Israel of God caught, beat and sent away God's servant prophets

*MAR 12:4 And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.*

Second attempt

*MAR 12:5 And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some.*

Several other attempts

*MAR 12:6 Having yet therefore one son, his wellbeloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my son.*

God sent His son, Jesus Christ

*MAR 12:7 But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.*

Plotted to and did kill Him. Don't take the Jews off the hook here folks.

Yes, He died for our sins and theirs, but they plotted to kill Him. The true Israel of God believed

**MAR 12:8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.**

Symbolically, He was crucified out side the city gates of government.

**MAR 12:9 What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.**

What will God do?

He will destroy the husbandmen, 70 ad

He will give the vineyard to another, Christians/God's Israel.

So important that we rule as God would rule.

**MAR 12:10 And have ye not read this scripture; The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner:**

*PSA 118:22 The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner.*

*ISA 28:16 Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste.*

*JER 51:26 And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but thou shalt be desolate for ever, saith the LORD.*

*ACT 4:11 This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.*

*EPH 2:20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;*

*IPE 2:6 Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.*

*IPE 2:7 Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,*

**MAR 12:11 This was the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?**

**MAR 12:12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people: for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.**

They knew folks, they were guilty.

### **~Parable of the Vine-growers**

**LUK 20:9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable; A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far country for a long time.**

**LUK 20:10 And at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty.**

**LUK 20:11 And again he sent another servant: and they beat him also, and entreated him shamefully, and sent him away empty.**

**LUK 20:12 And again he sent a third: and they wounded him also, and cast him out.**

**LUK 20:13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him when they see him.**

**LUK 20:14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.**

**LUK 20:15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them?**

*LUK 20:16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.*

*LUK 20:17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?*

*LUK 20:18 Whosoever shall fall upon that stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.*

*LUK 20:19 And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.*

*Wed 8/10/05*

*Guest at the Wedding Feast*

*~Parable of the Marriage Feast*

*MAT 22:1 And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said,*

*MAT 22:2 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son,*

Kingdom of Heaven = Kingdom of God, authority and ruler-ship of God.

Where is the law of God? The Bible

What people make up the body of law keepers and preachers, Christians, church and their nations.

From Christø ascension until He returns

A certain king = God

Made a marriage =

for His son = Jesus Christ

*God & Israel*

*ISA 50:1 Thus saith the LORD, Where is the bill of your mother's divorcement, whom I have put away? ..... and for your transgressions is your mother put away.*

*ISA 54:5 For thy Maker is thine husband; the LORD of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called.*

### **Israel Divorced**

*Jer 3: 8 And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery **I had put her away, and given her a bill of divorce**; yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also.*

**Turn, O backsliding children, saith the LORD; for I am married unto you:**

#### **Move you**

*a) and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion:*

#### **Give you pastors**

*b) 15 And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.*

#### **Old Temple worship removed**

*c) 16 And it shall come to pass, when ye be multiplied and increased in the land, in those days, saith the LORD, they shall say no more, The ark of the covenant of the LORD: neither shall it come to mind: neither shall they remember it; neither shall they visit it; neither shall that be done any more.*

#### **New Jerusalem**

*d) 17 At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the LORD; and all the nations shall be gathered unto it, to the name of the LORD, to Jerusalem: neither shall they walk any more after the imagination of their evil heart.*

#### **A New Land**

*e) 18 In those days the house of Judah shall walk with the house of Israel, and they shall come together out of the land of the north to the land that I have given for an inheritance unto your fathers.*

***DEU 32:8 When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel.***

*20 Surely as a wife treacherously departeth from her husband, so have ye dealt treacherously with me, O house of Israel, saith the LORD.*

### ***Hosea 2:1- Israel God's wife***

***ROM 7:1 Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?***

***2 For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.***

***3 So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be***



*called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.*

*4 Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead,*

*REV 19:7 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.*

*8 And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.*

*9 And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.*

*10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.*

***MAT 22:3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.***

And sent forth His servants = John Baptist, Disciples  
The Bidden = Judeans of that day  
Rejected Him

***MAT 22:4 Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.***

Even Jesus Christ and others invited them

***MAT 22:5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:***

***MAT 22:6 And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.***

Judah killed John the Baptist & Jesus

***MAT 22:7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city.***



*From ad 30 to ad 70 (40 years) the Gospel was offered first to the Jews Judah, Judean, Jewish religion*

70 AD

His Armies = Romans

Destroyed those murders

burned their city = Jerusalem

*MAT 22:8 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.*

*MAT 22:9 Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.*

*MAT 22:10 So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.*

Highways =

*ISA 11:16 And there shall be an highway for the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria; like as it was to Israel in the day that he came up out of the land of Egypt.*

*ISA 35:8 And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein.*

*9 No lion shall be there, nor any ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk there:*

*10 And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.*

*ISA 62:10 Go through, go through the gates; prepare ye the way of the people; cast up, cast up the highway; gather out the stones; lift up a standard for the people.*

*MAT 22:11 And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:*

*MAT 22:12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless.*

*MAT 22:13 Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

The garment was provided by the king, righteousness of Christ

***ISA 61:10 I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels.***

*REV 7:9 After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, **clothed with white robes**, and palms in their hands;*

*13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are **arrayed in white robes**? and whence came they?*

*14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, **and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.***

#### **Many Called Few Chosen**

***MAT 22:14 For many are called, but few are chosen.***

MAT 20:16 So the last shall be first, and the first last: **for many be called, but few chosen.**

MAT 22:14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

**DEU 14:2 For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy God, and the LORD hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto himself, above all the nations that are upon the earth.**

**1PE 2:9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light;**

~Victory for the Lamb

REV 17:14 These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.

### *Questions Asked*

#### **Paying Taxes to Caesar**

#### **~Tribute to Caesar**

***MAT 22:15 Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in his talk.***

***MAT 22:16 And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.***

*MAT 22:17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?*

*MAT 22:18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?*

*MAT 22:19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a penny.*

*MAT 22:20 And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription?*

*MAT 22:21 They say unto him, Caesar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's.*

*MAT 22:22 When they had heard these words, they marveled, and left him, and went their way.*

### ***WED NIGHT VISTA AUG 3 HERE***

#### **Jesus Answers the Pharisees, Sadducees and Scribes**

*MAR 12:13 And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.*

*MAR 12:14 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar, or not?*

*MAR 12:15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny, that I may see it.*

*MAR 12:16 And they brought it. And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Caesar's.*

*MAR 12:17 And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him.*

*LUK 20:20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.*

*LUK 20:21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of any, but teachest the way of God truly:*

*LUK 20:22 Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no?*

*LUK 20:23 But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me?*

*LUK 20:24 Shew me a penny. Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Caesar's.*

*LUK 20:25 And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Caesar's, and unto God the things which be God's.*

*LUK 20:26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.*

### **Challenged on Resurrection**

*MAT 22:23 The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,*

*MAT 22:24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.*

*MAT 22:25 Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother:*

*MAT 22:26 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.*

*MAT 22:27 And last of all the woman died also.*

*MAT 22:28 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.*

*MAT 22:29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.*

*MAT 22:30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.*

*MAT 22:31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,*

*MAT 22:32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.*

*MAT 22:33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.*

*MAR 12:18 Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying,*

*MAR 12:19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man's brother die, and leave his wife behind him, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.*

*MAR 12:20 Now there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed.*

*MAR 12:21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed: and the third likewise.*

*MAR 12:22 And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also.*

*MAR 12:23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife.*

*MAR 12:24 And Jesus answering said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God?*

*MAR 12:25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels which are in heaven.*

*MAR 12:26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?*

*MAR 12:27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly err.*

*LUK 20:27 Then came to him certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any resurrection; and they asked him,*

*LUK 20:28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.*

*LUK 20:29 There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children.*

*LUK 20:30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childless.*

*LUK 20:31 And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also: and they left no children, and died.*

*LUK 20:32 Last of all the woman died also.*

*LUK 20:33 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.*

*LUK 20:34 And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage:*

*LUK 20:35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage:*

*LUK 20:36 Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.*

*LUK 20:37 Now that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.*

*LUK 20:38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him.*

## *The Great Commandment*

*MAT 22:34 But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.*

*MAT 22:35 Then one of them, which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,*

*MAT 22:36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law?*

*MAT 22:37 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.*

*MAT 22:38 This is the first and great commandment.*

*MAT 22:39 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.*

*MAT 22:40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.*

*MAR 12:28 And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?*

*MAR 12:29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord:*

*MAR 12:30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.*

*MAR 12:31 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.*

*MAR 12:32 And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he:*

*MAR 12:33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.*

*MAR 12:34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.*

*LUK 20:39 Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.*

*LUK 20:40 And after that they durst not ask him any question at all.*

## *Christ Challenges the Pharisees.*

*MAT 22:41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,*

*MAT 22:42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, The son of David.*

*MAT 22:43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,*

*MAT 22:44 The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?*

*MAT 22:45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?*

*MAT 22:46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man from that day forth ask him any more questions.*

*MAR 12:35 And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David?*

*MAR 12:36 For David himself said by the Holy Ghost, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.*

*MAR 12:37 David therefore himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he then his son? And the common people heard him gladly.*

*MAR 12:38 And he said unto them in his doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the marketplaces,*

*MAR 12:39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts:*

*MAR 12:40 Which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.*

*LUK 20:41 And he said unto them, How say they that Christ is David's son?*

*LUK 20:42 And David himself saith in the book of Psalms, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,*

*LUK 20:43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.*

*LUK 20:44 David therefore calleth him Lord, how is he then his son?*

### **Jesus Pronounces Condemnation of the Scribes & Pharisees**

*MAT 23:1 Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,*

*MAT 23:2 Saying The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat:*

*MAT 23:3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.*

*MAT 23:4 For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers.*

*MAT 23:5 But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,*

*MAT 23:6 And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,*

*MAT 23:7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.*

*MAT 23:8 But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren.*

*MAT 23:9 And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.*

*MAT 23:10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ.*

*MAT 23:11 But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.*

*MAT 23:12 And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.*

*MAT 23:13 But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.*

*MAT 23:14 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.*

*MAT 23:15 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.*

*MAT 23:16 Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor!*

*MAT 23:17 Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?*

*MAT 23:18 And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.*

*MAT 23:19 Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?*

*MAT 23:20 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.*

*MAT 23:21 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.*

*MAT 23:22 And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.*

*MAT 23:23 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.*

MAT 23:24 Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.  
 MAT 23:25 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.  
 MAT 23:26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.  
 MAT 23:27 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.  
 MAT 23:28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.  
 MAT 23:29 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,  
 MAT 23:30 And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.  
 MAT 23:31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.  
 MAT 23:32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.  
 MAT 23:33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?  
 MAT 23:34 Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city:  
 MAT 23:35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.  
 MAT 23:36 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

MAT 23:37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!  
 MAT 23:38 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.  
 MAT 23:39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

MAR 12:38 And he said unto them in his doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the marketplaces,  
 MAR 12:39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts:  
 MAR 12:40 Which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.

LUK 20:45 Then in the audience of all the people he said unto his disciples,  
 LUK 20:46 Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts;  
 LUK 20:47 Which devour widows' houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.

## *Coming Events*

### **Discourse on the Signs of The Times**

~Signs of Christ's Return

***MAT 24:1 And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple.***

***MAT 24:2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.***

***MAT 24:3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?***

***MAT 24:4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.***

***MAT 24:5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.***

*MAT 24:6 And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.*

*MAT 24:7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places.*

*MAT 24:8 All these are the beginning of sorrows.*

*MAT 24:9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.*

*MAT 24:10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.*

*MAT 24:11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.*

*MAT 24:12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.*

*MAT 24:13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.*

*MAT 24:14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*

*~Perilous Times*

*MAT 24:15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:)*

*MAT 24:16 Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains:*

*MAT 24:17 Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house:*

*MAT 24:18 Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.*

*MAT 24:19 And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!*

*MAT 24:20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day:*

*MAT 24:21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.*

*MAT 24:22 And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.*

*MAT 24:23 Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not.*

*MAT 24:24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.*

*MAT 24:25 Behold, I have told you before.*

*MAT 24:26 Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not.*

*MAT 24:27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.*

*MAT 24:28 For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.*

*~The Glorious Return*

*MAT 24:29 Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:*

*MAT 24:30 And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.*

*MAT 24:31 And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.*

*~Parable of the Fig Tree*

*MAT 24:32 Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh:*

*MAT 24:33 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.*

*MAT 24:34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.*

*MAT 24:35 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.*

*MAT 24:36 But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father*



only.

*MAT 24:37 But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.*

*MAT 24:38 For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark,*

*MAT 24:39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.*

*MAT 24:40 Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.*

*MAT 24:41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left.*

*~Be Ready for His Coming*

*MAT 24:42 Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.*

*MAT 24:43 But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.*

*MAT 24:44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh.*

*MAT 24:45 Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season?*

*MAT 24:46 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.*

*MAT 24:47 Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods.*

*MAT 24:48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming;*

*MAT 24:49 And shall begin to smite his fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken;*

*MAT 24:50 The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of,*

*MAT 24:51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

*~Things to Come*

*MAR 13:1 And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones and what buildings are here!*

*MAR 13:2 And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.*

*MAR 13:3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately,*

*MAR 13:4 Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?*

*MAR 13:5 And Jesus answering them began to say, Take heed lest any man deceive you:*

*MAR 13:6 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.*

*MAR 13:7 And when ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled: for such things must needs be; but the end shall not be yet.*

*MAR 13:8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorrows.*

*MAR 13:9 But take heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them.*

*MAR 13:10 And the gospel must first be published among all nations.*

*MAR 13:11 But when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost.*

*MAR 13:12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.*

*MAR 13:13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.*

**MAR 13:14** But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth understand,) then let them that be in Judaea flee to the mountains:

**MAR 13:15** And let him that is on the housetop not go down into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house:

**MAR 13:16** And let him that is in the field not turn back again for to take up his garment.

**MAR 13:17** But woe to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

**MAR 13:18** And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

**MAR 13:19** For in those days shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created unto this time, neither shall be.

**MAR 13:20** And except that the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elect's sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days.

**MAR 13:21** And then if any man shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ; or, lo, he is there; believe him not:

**MAR 13:22** For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.

**MAR 13:23** But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

~The Return of Christ

**MAR 13:24** But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

**MAR 13:25** And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

**MAR 13:26** And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory.

**MAR 13:27** And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

**MAR 13:28** Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is near:

**MAR 13:29** So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, even at the doors.

**MAR 13:30** Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done.

**MAR 13:31** Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

**MAR 13:32** But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

**MAR 13:33** Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is.

**MAR 13:34** For the Son of Man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.

**MAR 13:35** Watch ye therefore: for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cockcrowing, or in the morning:

**MAR 13:36** Lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping.

**MAR 13:37** And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.

**LUK 21:5** And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said,

**LUK 21:6** As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

**LUK 21:7** And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass?

**LUK 21:8** And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.

**LUK 21:9** But when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the end is not by and by.

~Things to Come

**LUK 21:10** Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom:

*LUK 21:11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven.*

*LUK 21:12 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake.*

*LUK 21:13 And it shall turn to you for a testimony.*

*LUK 21:14 Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer:*

*LUK 21:15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.*

*LUK 21:16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.*

*LUK 21:17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake.*

*LUK 21:18 But there shall not an hair of your head perish.*

*LUK 21:19 In your patience possess ye your souls.*

*LUK 21:20 And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.*

*LUK 21:21 Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto.*

*LUK 21:22 For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.*

*LUK 21:23 But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people.*

*LUK 21:24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.*

*~The Return of Christ*

*LUK 21:25 And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring;*

*LUK 21:26 Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.*

*LUK 21:27 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.*

*LUK 21:28 And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.*

*LUK 21:29 And he spake to them a parable; Behold the fig tree, and all the trees;*

*LUK 21:30 When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand.*

*LUK 21:31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.*

*LUK 21:32 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled.*

*LUK 21:33 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.*

*LUK 21:34 And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.*

*LUK 21:35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.*

*LUK 21:36 Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.*

*LUK 21:37 And in the day time he was teaching in the temple; and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olives.*

*LUK 21:38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.*

By: E.G. Ramsey, ThG, D.D.

Published by  
America Today Publishers  
A Ministry of the  
**Faith Baptist Church**  
Houston, Mo. 65483

[www.everettramseydd.com](http://www.everettramseydd.com)